

MUNPIA



BREAKERS 취룡 퓨전 판타지 장편소설

# 브레이커즈 1

# **Breakers**

**- 브레이커즈 -**

**- Part 3 -**

**-Author-  
Chwiryong**

**[ Rainbow Turtle (Wuxiaworld) ]**

# Chapter 102

## Test

The Demon King's Palace was the center of the Demon World.

In addition to its geographical significance, it was the center of culture and technology, containing things that weren't easy to find in other parts of the Demon World.

An airport for flying ships was one of those things.

There were dozens of people gathered at the flying ship airport which contained large and small hangars as well as a large space for take-off and landing.

However, even if it was the Demon King's Palace, it was rare to have so many people gathered at the flying ship airport:

The concubine's children and their subordinates;

The nobles of the Demon King's Palace and their servants;

And the servants who came out to meet their masters.

The reasons why all of them had gathered were slightly different, but it was ultimately to meet those who would soon be arriving.

Someone raised their hands and pointed to the sky, then someone else exclaimed and everybody looked up. There were also those who made welcoming gestures.

A sailboat with dark sails was riding the wind.

It was the flagship of the 5th Prince, Silvan Doomblade.

The Black Flame Dragon had arrived at the Demon King's Palace.

They had not planned anything in advance. However, Chris and Felicia exchanged glances and got into the most appropriate formation.

In-gong was the first one to get off after Silvan's crew members put out the folding staircase.

In-gong was immediately followed by Carack, while Chris and Felicia each took on a position to their left and right so that the two men were in the center. As always, Caitlin and Silvan stood beside Chris and Felicia. The rest of the aides, except Carack, followed their masters, creating a formation that centered naturally around In-gong.

This formation had symbolic meaning.

A rectangular table formation like this didn't exist without reason.

The center of the group...

Was the one who led the group.

Not only had five children of the demon king gathered together, but they were acting together.

5th Prince, 6th Princess, 7th Prince and 8th Princess...

They represented the royal families of the dark elves and the lycanthropes.

Why were they moving together? Who tied them together?

The answer was clear.

Just by looking, they could tell who was leading the crowd.

It was 9th Prince Shutra Ignus...

The one who had defeated the Red Lightning tribe with 7th Prince and 8th Princess.

During the mission, he had rescued the 6th Princess and the 6th Princess showed her devotion by helping 9th Prince.

Additionally, the 5th Prince was added since he couldn't stand to fight with the 6th Princess.

Their suspicions became certain.

Some were happy while others felt discomfort.

However, all of them understood intuitively.

A new faction had emerged in the Demon King's Palace.

The youngest and so called Prince of Scraps, Shutra Ignus, was the head of that new faction.

In-gong smiled bitterly as he descended the folding stairs under the flood of gazes. He couldn't tell what they were thinking through their eyes and facial expressions alone, but he knew.

"This is overwhelming."

When he first visited, there had been no one to greet him and the second visit only had Felicia's aides.

Then the third visit...

Everyone was paying attention to In-gong. Moreover, this time there was someone who came out to greet In-gong.

Flora, the butler for his residence at the Demon King's Palace, stood with two people. As always, Flora seemed somewhat expressionless, so In-gong sighed when he saw her.

"I'm glad."

"What are you glad about?"

"Flora still seems the same."

Carack cocked his head at In-gong's words but In-gong just smiled.

He didn't want Flora to look at Carack like Karma, Seira, Delia, Sepira and Daphne did.

In-gong erased his smile as he had almost completely descended from the folding stairs. Then he heard Silvan's voice behind him,

"There are draconians. They seem to be hiding, but they can't fool my eyes..."

"I smell the nightmares. Everybody has shown up. Don't you like this?"

Chris said, cutting off Silvan's words as he was talking.

Unlike Silvan's haughty voice, Chris' was mixed with the snarl of a predator.

Draconians and nightmares had come out. There were none in the group, so they hadn't come out to welcome the party. It was either reconnaissance or spying.

It showed that they were aware of the group.

In-gong couldn't be ignored.

"It is great to see 9th Prince."

Flora bowed to In-gong. Subsequently, the servants in charge of Felicia's and Chris' mansion were gathered.

There were some concubine children who had greeted him on the second visit and some unfamiliar faces.

In-gong ordered Flora to move the baggage from the Black Flame Dragon to the mansion. Although In-gong had virtually no baggage, Amita had a lot.

Daphne, who was hugging Amita, decided to go with Flora. Additionally, Amita had already agreed to act like a normal raccoon. It was Amita's request since they didn't want to be involved in any troublesome business.

Felicia and Chris entrusted their baggage to their stewards and accompanied In-gong instead of heading back to their residences.



As a result, their aides joined the party and a group of over 20 people were moving together. Moreover, In-gong was the leader of this group.

'Returning home in glory.'

There were many concubine children who wanted to talk to In-gong. Among them were Silas and Selene whom In-gong had wanted to secure like Daphne.

He didn't have to go personally to each person in order to recruit talented individuals. Another way to recruit talent was to create a power that would make the talent come find him.

In-gong moved toward the Merits Department.

His followers, including the concubine children, scattered in front of the Merits Department, but there was still many remaining.

There were five of the demon king's children and their four aides.

Isabella, who was in charge of the Merits Department, smiled with admiration and confusion as the room felt narrower than usual.

"9th Prince is always surprising me."

Her lamia tail waved pleasantly. The smile of a beauty was always pleasant, so In-gong laughed alone when a voice interrupted them.

"Isabella, I'm here as well."

Chris grinned playfully. It would be embarrassing under other situations, but it was different with the children of the demon king who were close to Isabella. She laughed like she was accustomed to Chris' frivolity and gave an exaggerated bow.

"Of course, I know. It has been awhile since I've seen 7th Prince at the Merits Department."

Chris was satisfied with the intimate tone. Then another voice was heard,

"Me too."

"Yes, 5th Prince, I know. I'm very pleased to see 6th Prince and 8th Princess."

'She is like a nanny to children.'

In fact, Isabella had seen the children of the demon king since they were children. She even had a friendly attitude to Zephyr. Maybe 1st Prince Baikal and 4th Princess Anastasia wouldn't be much different.

He didn't know if it was a way to deal with the demon king's children or due to friendship, but Isabella didn't get involved in any political problems such as factions.

She only greeted In-gong today as a representative of the Merits Department.

"9th Prince, what can I do for you today?"

"I want to install a new facility in my mansion."

"This scammer! This isn't a smithy!"

Amita burst out and pounded their tail on the ground.

In-gong had just installed it, so the smithy was virtually empty.

"Now, there will be one. Amita can decorate it as you like. It will be your private smithy. If you have anything you want, please say so at any time."

Amita responded to In-gong's friendly words by covering their face with their hands.

"Ohh, somehow, I have an ominous feeling like I can never escape from this place..."

They needed to create more than a dozen equipment. So, an extended stay was required, no matter how good Amita was.

While Amita was pessimistic about their future, Daphne took out a blue collar.



"Amita, this is a necklace. All pets in the Demon King's Palace must have necklaces. Don't forget to act normal."

Amita's necklace was truly a dog's collar. Amita looked up at Daphne with a bemused expression for a moment.

"You— Are you enjoying this?"

"Aye, that is impossible."

Daphne laughed and Amita gave a long sigh. They seemed to have given up.

'I'm glad I have Daphne.'

It seemed like he could leave Amita to Daphne.

In-gong moved the materials in his inventory to one side of the smithy, then headed for the salon room of the mansion. Felicia, Silvan, Chris and Caitlin were gathered in the salon room.

"The aides?"

"They are having a separate tea time. Shouldn't the counselors have time to rest as well?"

In-gong slightly frowned at Felicia's answer as an image of Carack sitting in a flower garden popped into his head.

In-gong felt angry and Caitlin looked at him curiously.

"Shutra?"

"No, it is nothing."

In-gong erased the image of Carack in a flower garden and sat down between Caitlin and Felicia.

Unlike Caitlin, Felicia laughed like she knew what In-gong had been imagining.

"Anyway, there will be a court gathering in two days. Apart from this alliance, there will be Baikal orabeoni, Zephyr orabeoni, Victor orabeoni and Anastasia unni... All of the children of the demon king will be there."

Even in Knight Saga, there hadn't been a case of all the demon king's children attending a court gathering. In the lycanthrope subjugation, Chris and Caitlin had been, naturally, absent and Shutra hadn't been present at the other times.

Silvan remained silent due to Chris while Caitlin, who wanted to get close to the other royal children, had a mixed look of worry and expectation on her face.

Chris grabbed Caitlin's hand and said,

"As Mother said, you shouldn't worry about it. Maybe there is a problem on the periphery."

"The periphery?"

Felicia was the one who asked. Chris nodded and continued speaking,

"I heard some things on the way, but I'll have to check again today. It seems like the contents of the court gathering haven't been publicized to the palace yet."

Maybe it was an incident similar to the uprising of the Red Lightning tribe.

Due to the fact that the story hadn't spread in the castle, Chris judged it wasn't a big deal and changed the subject to something else.

"Rather..."

"Rather?"

"I am already looking forward to it. What else will happen at this court gathering? I was sad that I couldn't participate in Shutra's second court gathering."

He wanted something extraordinary to happen so that everyone would be shocked.

On the other hand, Felicia frowned and touched her chest.

"My heart isn't good. Please let this time go smoothly, Shutra. Yes?"

Silvan's and Caitlin's gazes also turned to In-gong. In-gong smiled in a manner similar to the gaze had given Amita when he had spoken about the smithy.

Two days later, it was the day of the court gathering.

In-gong's faction was in the waiting room. Baikal and Zephyr were going to participate in the court gathering without waiting, while Victor and Anastasia were in a different room. Therefore, everybody was comfortable, except for Silvan.

"Uhh, I've worn this three times and I'm still not used to it."

Carack spoke while touching his tie. Due to his hulking shoulders, Carack looked pretty good in a suit.

In-gong glanced at the others. As always, Felicia was wearing a red dress cut so deep, he could glimpse her hip bone, while Silvan was wearing a black uniform decorated with gold thread. He couldn't wear his captain clothes and wasn't exposed like Felicia, but he was still wearing his eyepatch.

Caitlin was wearing a blue dress that emphasized her waist, making her look calm and cute.

However, the most noticeable one was Chris. Although he had big muscles like Carack, Chris gave off a wild feeling in his black suit.

In-gong wore the white suit that he had already worn twice to the court gatherings, but Felicia seemed very dissatisfied that he wore the same clothes three times in a row.

"Anyhow, please let this proceed well without any fuss."

Felicia held her hands together and prayed while Chris chuckled.

Then the waiting room door opened. It was their turn to enter.

As soon as the door opened, In-gong sensed it.

Something was wrong.

The court gathering was filled with silence. Confusion and surprise seemed to emerge even in the silence.

‘Why?’

In-gong looked in front of him. He could see the backs of 1st Prince Baikal, 2nd Prince Zephyr, 3rd Prince Victor and 4th Princess Anastasia who were kneeling on one knee before the demon king

It wasn’t because of them. They were surprised as well.

Zephyr and Anastasia didn’t reveal anything, but Baikal and Victor seemed somewhat uncomfortable.

‘Then what is it?’

In-gong’s gaze moved a little further, then he heard Silvan’s sound of shock from behind him. Felicia and Caitlin, as well as Chris who was expecting an extraordinary situation, couldn’t conceal their shock either.

At the highest place on the podium...

The demon king wasn’t alone. There was one person next to the throne of the demon king:

Sword Duke Ishgard.

He was an elder of the sura who had never once shown up at the court gathering ceremony. With the exception of the demon king, he was someone who boasted the greatest strength in the Demon World!

His eyes moved toward In-gong, then his pleasant voice filled the silence.

"9th Prince, it has been one month. How are you?"

It was a light greeting.

However, it could never be taken lightly.

All eyes turned to In-gong and there were suppressed moans in many places.

# Chapter 103

## Test #2

It was already shocking that the sword duke had appeared at the court gathering.

Yet the sword duke had immediately spoken to one of the princes.

The meaning of this was enormous.

The 1st Prince, 2nd Prince, 3rd Prince and 4th Princess...

The sword duke hadn't spoken to the previous four people. He had gazed at the 2nd Prince with interested eyes, but that was all.

He hadn't greeted them or acted friendly.

Moreover, there was one important fact.

'It's been a month.

'How are you?'

The combination of everything and this short greeting resulted in only one conclusion:

9th Prince and the sword duke had met in the past.

Additionally, it had been during just this past one month.

Those who were participating in the court gathering weren't stupid; most of them remembered the last court gathering.

The last court gathering...

The day afterwards, 9th Prince had headed to Thunderdoom Fortress.

'How had the 9th Prince met the sword duke? Had the sword duke gone to visit 9th Prince?'

'Moreover, it wasn't somebody else but truly the sword duke?'

'The sword duke?!'

These questions raised some doubts.

The shock caused an even greater impact.

1st Prince Baikal Ragnaros flinched. He wanted to look behind him.

3rd Prince Victor Nekrion, on the other hand, couldn't endure it. He looked back with a confused and awkward expression.

4th Princess Anastasia Nekrion repressed herself, but she also revealed a slight shaking in her body.

It was just the 2nd Prince who didn't seem to care. However, In-gong didn't care about any of this. Everyone was busy looking between the sword duke and In-gong, while In-gong was struggling with the ripples caused by the sword duke's greeting.

Felicia repressed an urge to press her hand to her chest and her stomach hurt like she had often read in the novels she read as a hobby. This was definitely something that hurt her stomach.

'Sword duke! You are already getting too much attention!'

The sword duke had certainly said it at Thunderdoom Fortress.

He had said the fact that 9th Prince had combined Sura Heart Law and Divine Beast Authority into Divine Sura Authority should be concealed.

9th Prince was already receiving too much attention. If this fact was known, people would be even more wary toward him.

Then what was this? Was this the trial that often appeared in novels? Or perhaps, it was a test?



‘What is this bullying?’

There shouldn’t be trials or tests.

Felicia erased all the prideful things in her head, trying to calm her mind and maintain her composure.

Anyway, it was a situation where the sword duke had greeted In-gong.

There had to be a response.

How should he respond? Should he greet the sword duke? Or should he maintain his silence in front of the demon king?

It was not Felicia but In-gong who needed to respond. Even so, her stomach was hurting. It was really bad for her heart.

Only a few seconds had passed by.

During this period of time that was both short and long, Felicia was caught up in her pained thoughts while everyone was amazed.

“Oh, I was rude. I forgot this is the inner palace of the demon king.”

The sword duke spoke again. He bowed to the demon king in apology and the demon king accepted it with his usual face.

The storm had passed.

However, the calm after the storm wasn’t calm.

Pent-up emotions...

The atmosphere in the Demon King’s Palace was like trying to hide a mess with a big white cloth.

This incident didn’t take long to pass. It was thanks to Isabella, the organizer of the court gathering, remembering her duties.

“9... No, 5th Prince, Silvan Doomblade.”

It was a minor misstep but most people understood the mistake. No, there were many who didn't even realize the mistake.

For example, Silvan who stepped forward. Additionally, Felicia, who was watching Silvan, felt an intense pain in her stomach and heart again.

‘Silvan! Your hands and feet should go together!’

Why was Silvan the one who had to go out first?

Silvan had received a very big shock because he had always wanted to be noticed by the sword duke. His steps were awkward like a man who had forgotten how to walk, but fortunately, everyone was still in shock. There were a few who noticed Silvan's mistake, but Silvan was able to show the proper procedure when he reached the demon king. This was due to Silvan having been born as a prince and grown up as one.

Felicia sighed with relief, but she then became tense again.

“6th Princess, Felicia Doomblade.”

Why was she next after Silvan?

Felicia blamed the 3rd Queen Sylvia Doomblade for a moment, then stepped forward gracefully at Isabella's call stepping forward at Isabella's call.

After that were Chris and Caitlin. Thanks to having some time to prepare, the two people were able to regain their composure and showed much more relaxed appearances than Silvan and Felicia had shown.

Chris was smiling confidently as always while Caitlin had a gentle expression on her face.

Then finally, it was In-gong's turn.

“9th Prince, Shutra Ignus.”

In-gong's steps coincided with Isabella's call. It was like crossing a sea of gazes, but In-gong just smiled.

'This is the third.'

The fact that humans were creatures of adaptation seemed to fit this perfectly.

As he stood on the right of all the royal children, In-gong got down on one knee before the demon king.

As usual, it was time to announce the merits of all the royal children who participated in the court gathering.

However, this court gathering wasn't to announce the merits and appreciate the achievements.

After looking at all his children for a moment, the demon king glanced at the sword duke.

"Sword Duke, did you leave the sanctuary a while ago to meet Shutra?"

After the demon king's question, everyone listened attentively. The fact that the demon king spoke in the court gathering had no great impact now.

Not only was the other person the teacher of the demon king, but the question itself was very interesting.

The sword duke had left the sanctuary.

Moreover, it had been in order to meet the 9th Prince.

Most people in the room didn't know what the sanctuary was, but the important thing wasn't the sanctuary. The important thing was that the sword duke had come personally to meet with 9th Prince.

Everyone paid attention to the sword duke's answer. The sword duke laughed lightly and replied,

"That's correct. It was a short but pleasant meeting. There was the taste of being a

teacher.”

It was a short answer, but they were words that absolutely couldn’t be missed.

The taste of teaching...

Felicia’s heart sank. Silvan froze with his mouth hanging open, while 3rd Prince Victor gritted his teeth.

One of the captains opened his mouth and said,

“Sword Duke, does that mean that 9th Prince is your disciple?”

It was Gallehed, the leader of the captains and a sura.

Among the sura, he was born with very rare blonde hair and was a handsome but gentle person.

If he only had a bright smile on his face, Gallehed would have been like the sun. However, for whatever reason, there was always darkness on one corner of his face.

He represented the captains, so they were also interested in the answer.

The sword duke answered the question coolly.

“9th Prince doesn’t use the sword. So, I could only teach him a few things.”

Someone swallowed their saliva.

The storm had ended only to reveal a larger storm.

According to his words, the 9th Prince would have become the sword duke’s disciple if he used a sword.

Even Gallehed, who had asked the question, was shocked. Of course, it had been one of the main possible answers but this was the sword duke who was saying it.

Silvan’s face changed again. Felicia was overwhelmed with the urge to hug Silvan, but she endured it. It was then that she realized the sword duke’s intention:

The sword duke didn't want to drive In-gong into a crisis.

It was quite the opposite.

'It is a situation in which he is already attracting attention. He is thinking like us.'

It was inevitable that they needed to be vigilant. If so, it was better to make a bigger impression on the people, than the other children of the demon king. It would give In-gong a chance to gather people.

In-gong, Felicia and Chris, they all thought this.

Additionally, it was the same for the sword duke.

It was natural to be vigilant. It was also natural to be alarmed, however, one shouldn't irritate him.

Irritate him...

Unless it was an emotional or extreme situation, they shouldn't do a preemptive strike.

For most cases of preemptive attacks, the attackers were weaker than the defenders.

'Simply put, he isn't easy to deal with.'

The 9th Prince was such a person. He hadn't been worth touching at all due to having no background.

However, 6th Princess and 7th Prince were now standing behind the 9th Prince. Additionally, the sword duke had revealed himself.

They couldn't even imagine touching him.

Richard, the draconian among the captains, narrowed his eyes. Yecaderina, a nightmare and another one of the captains, gave a cold smile.

"Interesting."

The demon king said. Then his next words focused all attention on Isabella.

"Go ahead."

"U-understood!"

Isabella unwittingly answered loudly and licked her lips. With a voice that was trembling slightly, she announced the purpose of this court gathering to everyone.

"This is happening in various places on the periphery of the Demon World."

With those ominous words, In-gong opened a large light map of the Demon World.

In Knight Saga, the Demon World wasn't a hell-like place.

It was a place inhabited by many species that could be called humans.

Of course, compare to it was a much more explicit zone compared to the Human World, so it was a land where ruthless and inhuman events often occurred. However, it wasn't a barbaric land.

In fact, the true place that humans thought of as the Demon World was actually spread out north of the Demon World.

The land of icecaps that existed beyond the Northern Limit Line...

It was an environment that could only be seen as hostile and all types of creatures had adapted to live in this hell.

The biggest role of the generals was to keep the Northern Limit Line from spilling over to here.

Of course, it wasn't just the land to the north.

Although it wasn't directly in contact with the buffer zone, the area to the south was also a boundary. Just like how the lands beyond the Northern Limit Line weren't worth conquering, the south contained multiple small tribes that were enemies of the Demon World.

The northern land, the Human World and the enemies on the periphery...

Was one of them moving?

Isabella explained in solemn tone,

"In the past two months, five areas on the periphery have been attacked by those surrounded by a purple aura. As a result, three of the five areas have become a patch of desert or wilderness."

Among the five areas shown on the map, Enger Plains was present.

"The first attack occurred at Enger Plains. And like it had been announced at the last court gathering, 6th Princess and 9th Prince managed to block this attack."

The other four areas were scattered all over the place, without any common ground.

"The last area that got attacked was Spider Forest near the lycanthrope territory. It is special because it isn't on the edge of the Demon World but requires travelling inward to reach it. It was 5th Prince, 6th Princess, 8th Princess and 9th Prince who prevented the attack on Spider Forest."

In-gong swallowed his saliva.

Without In-gong knowing it, the Death Knight had been attacking different areas in the Demon World. As a result, three of the five areas had become a patch of desert or wilderness.

'The guardians were killed.'

Enger Plains had been created with Ainkel's magic, so it was simple logic to think that it would become a desert if the magic was released.

However, what about the other places? Did the guardians have another role that In-gong didn't know about?

Anyway, it was already happening. The Death Knight, who wanted the end, was attacking throughout the Demon World.



"There was a report that people with a purple aura appeared in Thunderdoom Fortress. As a result of the series of events, we have determined that this hostile force can't be overlooked and have summoned you here to smash them."

Isabella stopped talking for a while before snapping her fingers to transform the map. In addition to the desert and wilderness areas, some turned into a more prominent colour.

"These are the areas that are expected to be attacked. We have summoned the princes and princesses to the Demon King's Palace in order to defend each region from the enemy's attack and trace the enemy's stronghold."

If he took a step back, it matched the missions he'd had so far.

Isabella looked at In-gong.

"As 9th Prince and 6th Princess were the ones to first detect the enemy and fend off two attacks, they will be given first choice. Do you have an area that you would like to be dispatched to?"

It was a somewhat difficult subject to decide on the spot. However, this was typical for the Demon King's Palace.

As the sword duke said, the Demon King's Palace was very familiar with these challenges. They wouldn't shrink back from a few sudden raids. Instead, it was a place to evaluate the demon king's children.

In-gong looked at the map. In each area, there was brief information about the characteristics of the region and the troops dispatched to that area.

The ability to pick a region to defend would also be a factor in evaluating the children of the demon king.

In-gong recalled the information he had about each area from Knight Saga, having remembered the rough geographical features.

There was one good place to defend due to the area's natural characteristics. On the other hand, another area was hard to defend because everywhere was open space.

In-gong laughed at his thoughts. It was a difficult place to defend, so he should avoid it, but his mind naturally went there.

‘General Vandal.’

It was the area he had been dispatched to after taking care of the Red Lightning tribe. Since a crisis was an opportunity, this might be the best chance to acquire General Vandal.

‘Of course, that is only if I can win.’

It would be a challenge. In-gong took a deep breath to calm his mind and said,

“I will go to Evian.”

Some people were relieved by In-gong’s declaration while others questioned it. In the end, there were those who laughed at him and said he was only a child.

Evian wasn’t a good place for defense, nor was it very important.

Even Felicia wondered why In-gong chose that place.

However, there was only one person who thought differently.

This person had wanted to go to Evian the moment the map had been opened.

Zephyr narrowed his eyes as he looked at In-gong.

# Chapter 104

## Test #3

After In-gong, who had the highest priority, made his selection, it was Felicia's turn.

"6th Princess, please make your selection."

Isabella said with a gentle smile, but there was some pressure in it.

Telling them to make a choice with almost no time to think...

This was one of the ways of evaluating the demon king's children, with regards to things like their judgment and determination.

After looking at the map for a moment, Felicia glanced at the pitiful-looking Silvan, then turned to In-gong. She sighed and made a decision,

"As you know, I'm more like a civil servant rather than a military officer. So, instead of taking an area directly, I will take on the role of supporting 9th Prince and go to Evian."

Unlike her energetic personality, her voice was clear and calm.

Felicia finished speaking and glanced up at the demon king. The demon king didn't speak directly but nodded to give permission to Felicia.

Felicia had never heard her name being called, but she was satisfied about that small exchange with the demon king. Stealthily, she pressed a hand against her chest to check her heart.

Chris looked at Felicia. She noticed Chris' gaze and the two people exchanged glances that showed their intentions.

Silvan's present condition wasn't that good, so Felicia wanted to embrace and comfort him.

However, she couldn't do so because this was the court gathering. While thinking about this, Felicia stepped back.

Silvan would recover soon. So, she should think about something else and not about sticking to Silvan.

Felicia didn't follow In-gong because she wanted to work with him.

Of course, she wanted such a thing inside her heart, but that wasn't the main reason.

Due to the return of the group and the sword duke's intervention, In-gong hadn't made a declaration, but he was recognized as the leader of the fourth faction.

In-gong needed support. Putting aside combat power, Felicia and Chris were the only ones able to assist In-gong in the political field.

However, Chris was a warrior. It was unnatural to say he would go with In-gong when he had a combat power comparable to Silvan's. That would be an excessive waste of combat power and the Demon King's Palace wouldn't accept it.

She didn't know why In-gong had picked Evian, but she would follow him. After all, they had been together since the Red Lightning Tribe.

After Felicia made her decision, knowing gazes were passed between the people gathered in the hall. It was widely known that Felicia had decided to help In-gong.

"From now on, the selection order will be decided based on the merits accumulated in the Merits Department. 2nd Prince, please make a selection."

Isabella gazed at Zephyr with gentle eyes. Zephyr then gazed at Evian for a moment, then turned toward the north.

"I will go to Haragal."

Many people nodded calmly at the 2nd Prince's declaration.

Haragal was as close to the Northern Limit Line as possible and was regularly attacked by violent creatures. Haragal's degree of difficulty was higher than Evian's, never lower.

Of course, nobody could be sure that there would be an actual attack on the area predicted by the Demon King's Palace or even about the scale of the enemies that would appear.

However, from the outset, Haragal was an important land. Haragal's land itself wasn't rich, but there were abundant resources underground including the papunil, that was called the vein of the Demon World.

Haragal was the shield that protected the papunil.

So, 2nd Prince's choice was expected. If there truly was an attack, then it was the area where the greatest merits could be gained.

'It is the next best thing since Zephyr was looking at Evian earlier.'

Since In-gong had first opened his eyes in Carack's barracks, he had been good at reading things.

When In-gong selected Evian, Zephyr clearly had a different reaction from usual. It was difficult to explain, but In-gong was able to sense it.

Zephyr seemed to be pursuing Evian as well.

If so, why? When looked at objectively, Evian wasn't a good choice.

'General Vandal.'

The name surfaced reflexively, but In-gong was certain. So, it was good that he sensed it.

Zephyr also seemed to be looking to bring in General Vandal.

In Knight Saga, Zephyr had been able to defeat Vandal at the end of his second year, Year 514. However, that had been in Knight Saga.

It was estimated that this Zephyr was much stronger than the Zephyr of Knight Saga. So, it was possible for the current Zephyr to beat Vandal.

As an adult, Zephyr was able to move freely and choose his own missions just like Silvan and Felicia. However, it wasn't possible for him to meet with military personnel any time he wanted.

So, maybe Zephyr thought about using this situation as an opportunity.

'It is quite plausible. Then shouldn't I hurry and get Nayatra and Sektum as well?'

They had been his three favourite subordinates in Knight Saga.

Succubus Knight Nayatra, the Worst Necromancer Sektum and the Ogre Warrior Vandal...

'I have to hurry and visit the slave auction house where Nayatra is. It is necessary to secure Nayatra before securing Sektum.'

Caitlin's birth secret had been the beginning of the lycanthrope subjugation.

The one who had obtained this information had been Nayatra. There was no guarantee that she would get the information, but he had to block Zephyr from acquiring her.

While In-gong was thinking, 1st Prince Baikal made his choice. Baikal also made a sensible choice.

Next, 4th Princess Anastasia made her decision. Her choice didn't overlap with In-gong's, Zephyr's or Baikal's.

3rd Prince Victor chose to support Anastasia and the demon king allowed it.

From In-gong to Anastasia, the leaders of each faction chose different areas and there were now only two areas left unselected.

"5th Prince, please make your selection."

Silvan jumped at Isabella's call and chose a place close to Evian. As there had been no abnormality when In-gong, Zephyr and the others made the selections, he had managed to restore most of his composure.

Now, there was only one area left and Chris and Caitlin, the siblings, had the

opportunity to choose.

Everyone thought they knew what the lycanthrope siblings would choose, so they thought there would be nothing else worth seeing.

Chris would choose the remaining area and Caitlin would follow.

It wasn't a bad thing. This was a good but reasonable choice.

However, Chris just laughed and exchanged glances with Caitlin who nodded.

"I will go to Kaltu."

Chris said the name of the remaining area.

The selections were now as good as over. Isabella turned to Caitlin with a gentle expression.

"8th Princess, please make your selection."

"I will go to Evian."

"I understand. Evian... huh?"

Isabella cried out involuntarily. Gellahed, who was standing with the other captains, also looked at Caitlin with confused eyes.

Caitlin took a deep breath and spoke calmly,

"9th Prince Shutra is still young compared to the other princes and princesses. 6th Princess is helping, but 6th Princess is a scholar and not a warrior. I am inexperienced as well, but I am a warrior. So, I think I would make a decent balance with 9th Prince and 6th Princess."

Her words were reasonable.

9th Prince had only started to stand out a few months ago.

Moreover, the Demon King's Palace didn't yet know In-gong's real strength, so they



didn't think he would be stronger than Caitlin.

Isabella, who thought Caitlin was going to follow Chris, looked at the demon king with a puzzled face. The demon king nodded again to express his permission.

It was a reasonable decision. From the beginning, the Demon King's Palace had thought Caitlin would go with Chris. However, Chris was much stronger than In-gong. So, there was no reason to refuse to let her accompany In-gong when they would have allowed her to accompany Chris.

"You have completed your area selections. Princes and Princesses, five days from today, you will start moving to each area. The information regarding the purple aura enemies will be sent to your homes."

Thus, the main agenda of the court gathering was over. As usual, there were a few ceremonial events to end the court gathering.

In-gong took a deep breath and looked around. The sword duke was smiling with an unknown expression while the demon king was as expressionless as always.

Gallehed was gazing at Caitlin with worry, while Yecaderina, the nightmares captain, was giving a lovely smile.

As for Richard...

The leader of the draconians and one of the strongest captains aside from Gallehed—

He had been In-gong's strongest ally when In-gong played Zephyr. However, at this moment, Richard was looking down at In-gong with a ferocious smile. In-gong ignored Richard's gaze and turned to Zephyr.

At that moment, Zephyr turned his gaze to In-gong as though he had been waiting for it and their gazes met in midair.

"I'm tired, tired, tired!"

As soon as they returned to the waiting room, Felicia threw herself onto a large sofa

and screamed.

Although it was far from polite, the people in the waiting room were all close to Felicia, so there was no need for politeness.

Felicia waved her arms and legs and kept sighing.

"Ah, the sword duke is a fool. A person like that isn't good for my heart. He should tell us in advance."

It had been a few days since the group had arrived at the Demon King's Palace. It would have been nice if he sent a simple message during that time. Despite that, he still insisted on surprising them today.

"S-sword Duke."

Silvan sat down next to Felicia and clutched his chest. Felicia felt sorry for Silvan and hugged him tightly.

"My poor Silvan."

He really wanted to become the sword duke's disciple.

As Felicia patted Silvan's back with gentle eyes, Chris turned his gaze to In-gong and said in a lively voice,

"Anyway, his actions were helpful. At today's court gathering, the sword duke practically announced that he is supporting Shutra. By the way, it is strange. How did you manage to catch the sword duke's heart? What is the secret? I want to learn how to do it."

Silvan's eyes flashed as he also wanted to learn the secret. In-gong just grinned awkwardly and replied,

"I don't know."

The sword duke's favor derived from In-gong's uniqueness and the demon king's interest. So, the other princes wouldn't be able to apply to this.

Felicia, who was still hugging Silvan, asked Chris suddenly,

"Chris, is it okay for Caitlin to not go with you?"

Felicia was also surprised when Caitlin said she would go with In-gong instead of Chris.

Chris replied with a shrug,

"It is bittersweet, but it will be more helpful than if she stays with me. It seems like the performance of the Moonlight Core and Starlight Core is better than expected."

It had only been about 10 days or so, but In-gong and Caitlin had shown a huge growth in their aura over the last 10 days. The synergy between the Moonlight Core and Starlight Core was truly amazing.

Chris patted Caitlin's head and asked,

"Caitlin, unlike Spider Forest, this might be a moderately long mission. Is that okay?"

"Yes, it is okay."

Unlike the time at the lycanthrope house, Caitlin answered with a bright smile. There was no unease at all.

"Really bittersweet."

Chris complained with slumped shoulders and Felicia laughed. She was still holding onto Silvan when she said,

"Well, today's work is over. The enemies with the purple aura, the sword duke... There are many things to talk about, but I want to rest for a while. Isn't that right, Silvan?"

"Hu... Sword Duke."

Silvan nodded reflexively. At that moment...

"Huh? Did you call me?"

The sword duke's voice was heard from behind them. Startled, Felicia jumped up from her seat and looked back.

"S-sword Duke?"

It truly was the sword duke. He laughed from the door of the waiting room, then he pinched Felicia's cheeks.

"This princess is still a baby. Aigoo, so cute."

Felicia's face was red while Silvan was stunned. The sword duke laughed and moved on.

"Ohh, 8th Princess. You are much bigger up close. I have to try it once."

"Huh? Kyak?!"

There was no time to reply. Just like he had done to Felicia at Thunderdoom Fortress, he placed his hands between Caitlin's arms and raised her up high.

"Higher, higher!"

As if he was playing with a little child, he kept spinning Caitlin.

At Thunderdoom Fortress, Felicia had screamed to be put down, but Caitlin was different. At first, she was panicked, but then she started to enjoy it. If she was to speak, she would say how amazing it was.

"Well, this is still fun. So adorable."

The word truly fit Caitlin who had red cheeks and sparkling eyes.

After greeting Felicia and Caitlin, the sword duke turned toward In-gong. In-gong regained his composure and spoke calmly,

"I greet the sword duke."

"I greet you as well. 5th Prince and 7th Prince too, it is a pleasure."

“Greetings.”

“G-greetings.”

Chris and Silvan greeted him as well. Chris was a little wary of the sword duke, while Silvan seemed eager to talk to him.

However, the first one to say something wasn’t a prince or princess.

“Look, what happened all of a sudden?”

It was Carack who asked.

Silvan was astonished while Chris flinched.

Carack had just casually asked the sword duke a question.

However, Felicia had already adapted to Carack, while Delia, Seira and Sepira just admired Carack’s boldness.

The sword duke just laughed pleasantly like he had at Thunderdoom Fortress and said to In-gong,

"I came to ask 9th Prince something. There is a story I would like to share, but I also have a request."

"A request?"

"Yes. I can only ask Prince."

The sword duke said with a laugh. There was mischief in his eyes, similar to when he played with Felicia and Caitlin.

"Can Prince invite me to your mansion? I want to see that person."

"Ya, ya! Stay away! Don’t tease me! Why the hell did you bring this brat? I decided we’re to keep it a secret! This is a breach of contract!"

# Chapter 105

## Test #4

"Ya, ya! Stay away! Don't tease me! Why the hell did you bring this brat? I had decided we're to keep it a secret! This is a breach of contract!"

Amita banged their tail against the floor.

It seemed like they were angrier than usual.

However, as usual, the party didn't pay attention to Amita's anger.

"The raccoon wearing glasses is cute!"

Caitlin patted her cheeks and sighed.

Caitlin's eyes shone brightly when she saw Amita wearing large, round glasses.

That wasn't all. Amita was squatting on the floor and embroidering a piece of cloth that Daphne was holding.

"Raccoon person, what are you doing?"

Carack asked the question that the party was curious about and Amita hit the ground with their tail again.

"Can't you tell just by looking? I am embroidering!"

There were coloured threads on a needle and a green cloth that fit well with Daphne. Felicia sighed when she saw the embroidery.

This was because they were sophisticated magic patterns and not just decorative embroidery.

However, the rest of the people just saw Amita's small hands holding a needle.

"Cute..."

Caitlin said once again, and Delia and Seira nodded in agreement.

Amita cried out again,

"Aish! Why did he come here?! And you! Don't smile or laugh! That expression is annoying!"

The target of Amita's needle was the sword duke, who laughed and pointed at Amita's neck.

"Amita, that necklace is something else. Did you change your job into a pet or something?"

A collar meant it was an animal with a master. Although it was necessary to disguise Amita as an ordinary raccoon, a collar was still a collar.

"Kiiii! This is a fashion item! Fashion!"

Amita jumped up and exclaimed, causing the sword duke to laugh even more. Daphne embraced Amita from behind.

"Amita, calm down. It suits you very well."

"Ohh..."

Although they were supposed to be comforting words, Amita's shoulders sagged after hearing that the collar fit them. Their voice also became heavy like they felt a sudden fatigue.

"Why the hell did you bring him anyway? I had decided to keep it a secret."

As Amita directed the question to In-gong, the sword duke then opened his mouth again.

"I asked him to invite me. I heard that 9th Prince's party arrived with a raccoon, so I thought it might be you."



They hadn't had one with them at Thunderdoom Fortress, so he was sure it was Amita when a raccoon suddenly appeared.

"However, it is really surprising. I told them your location but... I honestly hadn't expected you to accept the commission or to follow them."

"It is a long story, very long..."

Amita sighed with a grim expression.

Felicia glanced at Amita and asked in a cautious voice,

"Then Amita, how is your progress now?"

"What? Don't ask, don't ask! I hate people who pressure me about orders the most!"

Amita kicked their arms and legs from within Daphne's arms. The startled Felicia quickly explained,

"I'm not trying to pressure you. It's just that Silvan will go to a different place from us in a week. I want to give him the sword before that."

"Felicia."

Silvan stared at Felicia with moist eyes like he was touched. However, Felicia just pushed him aside and asked Amita again,

"How is it?"

It was for the sake of a brother and sister. Amita was weak in this regard and shook their head quietly.

"Uhh, I've drafted the blueprint but haven't started working on it yet. It is possible if I raise the priority of the sword from now on but..."

Amita glanced at Felicia and Silvan and sighed. It was because of Felicia's words and Silvan's eager expression.

"Well, I am tired of making armor, but the exterior will be simple. It will be like the sword duke's sword."

Amita pointed to the sword hanging from the sword duke's waist and the sword duke caressed it with a cheerful face.

"Simplicity is best."

As they had already seen at Thunderdoom Fortress, there were no decorations on the sword duke's sword. The sheath was shabby and the handle simple.

However, Silvan nodded like he liked it.

"Thank you. I will wait happily."

He was pleased about the fact that it would be similar to the sword duke's sword. It was something that Silvan would have asked for.

Once Amita gave their permission, Felicia looked at In-gong and Caitlin with an apologetic expression.

"Shutra, Caitlin, I'm sorry. Please understand."

"Yes, Unni. I'm fine."

"I'm okay."

Caitlin and In-gong answered coolly. Caitlin thought that Felicia had a good heart.

While In-gong... he had plenty of things to receive from Amita. 'And... I am going to take Amita on this journey.'

Silvan was going to a different area, so it was reasonable to supply him with his equipment first.

"Uhh, I am getting chills all of a sudden."

Amita suddenly shivered like they heard In-gong's thoughts.

"By the way, are you leaving after a week?"

"Yes, there is a new mission."

Felicia answered Amita's question. Amita frowned, then they said to In-gong,

"Um... 9th Prince, give me Earth Quaker and White Eagle. I will go ahead with their readjustment. I'll have to hurry."

"Will it be possible in time?"

"I will see. It isn't a new item but a readjustment."

Earth Quaker and White Eagle could be said to be In-gong's main force. As the period of unavailability increased, it would become more burdensome. It would be good to do it while in the relatively safe Demon King's Palace.

"Well, it is good to see you. I won't be staying in the Demon King's Palace for a long time, but I will often come to visit."

The sword duke laughed as he spoke and Amita waved their hand with a sour expression.

"You will disturb my work. Don't come, don't come. Don't laugh."

"Amita."

Daphne soothed Amita in an affectionate voice. It worked as Amita shook their tail and said,

"Well, yes. That reminds me, I have one thing to show you. I completed it over the past few days. It is a good feeling when something is completed."

"Ohh, what is it?"

Carack asked Amita excitedly.

"Your shield. Well, it is for 9th Prince, but it will be yours."

“Ohh!”

"Come along to the workshop."

Amita jumped out of Daphne's arms and walked out of the room. Carack looked at In-gong, clearly asking for permission, and In-gong gave it to him.

“Go.”

"I'm going."

Carack walked out of the room with light steps. The sword duke said with a smile,

"Amita now has many friends. You've made a good bond."

"It is thanks to Sword Duke's introduction."

"Anyone can receive an introduction, but it is uncommon for anyone to move Amita. You don't need to be so modest."

As he said those good words, Felicia raised her hand and asked,

"Sword Duke, what happened today? Is there any more detailed information about the enemies on the periphery?"

"I've heard many things and the atmosphere around the Demon King's Palace is bad. Even if the demon king doesn't mind you competing against each other, the royal children shouldn't harm each other. Well, it is also good that I saw 9th Prince."

As Felicia had guessed, the sword duke had intervened to help protect In-gong.

Moreover, the sword duke's words were true.

Even in Knight Saga, the children of the demon king never tried to harm each other by sending assassins or poisoning the food. As the sword duke said, the demon king didn't want that. Those who tried to attack their siblings would receive the wrath of the demon king.

The sword duke then answered Felicia's second question,

"The enemies on the periphery... Unfortunately, that information is to be distributed by the Merits Department. There is no such thing as specially hidden information."

After returning to the mansion from the court gathering, they had met Amita straight away, so there hadn't been a chance to check the information.

The sword duke then said,

"I'll just say one thing. An enemy with the strength of that spearman, who showed up at Thunderdoom Fortress, hasn't appeared."

The Demon King's Palace was dispatching the princes and princesses.

The surface reason was to defend each area.

However, if In-gong stepped back and looked at it, that wasn't the whole truth. They were dispatching the princes and princesses knowing that enemies with the purple aura would appear.

In addition to that, there was a second reason.

Dispatching the princes and princesses to the outside meant that the defenses in certain areas would be strengthened. In other words, the intention was to destroy the will to attack itself.

Of course, the places where the princes and princesses were dispatched were important areas that needed to be guarded.

The basic plan was for the princes and princesses to defend the area and trace the source of the purple aura.

After hearing the sword duke's words, In-gong recalled Zephyr's face.

He had wanted to go to Evian.

Currently, In-gong was opposing the Death Knight and Famine Knight. However, when talking about his ultimate enemy, he couldn't help thinking of Zephyr.

'I have to hurry.'

He had to secure Nayatra and accumulate the power to become the demon king.

'I have to go to the library. I don't know if I can get the information needed at my current merit level, but it would be better than not checking.'

This was to prepare for the Death Knight.

Along with the Four Knights of the Apocalypse, he needed more information about Conquest, War, Death and Famine going against the elder dragons:

The extinction of a native species;

The purpose of the Death Knight in killing the guardians;

The intense affection Famine and Death had toward Conquest;

And Watcher Ainkel's murder 1,000 years ago...

The keywords were scattered all over the place. There had to be a central axis connecting them.

Amita and Carack came back while In-gong was deep in thought.

"Prince, look at this! Didn't it turn out well?"

Carack held out a shield excitedly. It was a diamond shaped, black shield made of black dragon scales and leather.

"It is a little rough, but it is a tough shield."

Amita said with a proud smile.

In-gong asked Carack,

"Can I hold it for a moment?"

"Here you go."

Carack handed the shield to In-gong. Not only was the appearance crude, but it had a considerable weight.

As In-gong held the shield, letters made of light appeared in front of him.

[Strength has increased by 5.]

[Persistence has increased by 5.]

[Durability has increased by 5.]

[Built-in skill: Unite has been acquired.]

“Huh? Unite?”

In-gong muttered and Amita’s eyes shone.

"Heok, did you notice?"

“Huh? What does that mean? Unite?”

Carack asked with wide eyes. Amita responded with a laugh,

"There are additional parts. They can join with your shield.

"Additional parts?"

"Prince, give the shield back to the orc. Orc, the trigger word is caltos."

At Amita’s prompt, In-gong passed the shield back to Carack. Carack equipped the shield on his right arm, swallowed his saliva and shouted,

“Caltos!”

The moment he shouted, there were shouts outside in the hallway. It sounded like there was a struggle.

In-gong, Silvan and Chris responded to the sound, but the sword duke raised his hand and restrained them. The reason soon appeared.

“Ohh! Ohhh!”

Additional parts flew from Amita’s workshop and clung to Carack’s shield with a loud clang. The servants were surprised due to the extra parts.

With the addition of all the extra parts, Carack’s shield nearly doubled in size. It was like looking at a big, solid gate.

“It has magic reflection ability and the physical defense also increases significantly. When it comes to simple defense, it is better than White Eagle. Don’t worry, I’ve thought of an easy way to carry the additional parts.”

Amita raised their chin proudly, then the forgotten Green Wind’s upset voice was heard in In-gong’s ear.

‘Ah, no. My presence...’

In-gong laughed and said to Amita,

"Will you be able to readjust White Eagle?"

“It will be an interesting challenge.”

It was an equipment from an elder dragon.

Green Wind sighed with relief at Amita’s answer and the others were full of expectations for their equipment.

It was at that moment...

A bell rang a few times and Flora entered the room. She was embarrassed to see the group of excited people but soon return to her usual calm expression.

"9th Prince, a letter from the 1st Prince has arrived for you."

“From Baikal orabeoni?”



Instead of replying to Felicia's question, Flora handed the letter to In-gong.

All eyes were focused on In-gong as he opened it.

# Chapter 106

## Test #5

In-gong opened the sealed red envelope and pulled out a beautifully folded piece of stationery.

Although it was a somewhat slow response, In-gong tilted the letter gently and smelled it.

It didn't seem to be poisoned.

Flora would have confirmed it already, so it would be a big deal if something was wrong. However, In-gong had Hundred Poisons Resistance, so he confirmed it himself.

After completing a rough check, In-gong opened the letter, on which there were words written in a beautiful font.

My dear brother, Shutra Ignus,

I don't know what is going on, but all of my siblings are gathered at the Demon King's Palace.

Although we couldn't communicate properly at the court gathering, it was very nice to see everyone's faces.

Shutra, as you know, all of us have the same mission this time. The departure will be in one week.

This is an important mission that involves danger to the Demon World, but I think it is a great opportunity. After all, it is uncommon for all of us to gather at the Demon King's Palace.

Before we leave on our missions in a week's time, I hope to have a meeting between siblings. Wouldn't it be nice to see each other's faces and have a good chat?

Two days before departure, in the afternoon, I will hold a small tea party where all of our siblings are invited.

I'd like to invite you.

-Baikal Ragnaros.'

The contents were simple and affectionate for a letter written by royalty, but the royalty of the Demon World was different from the human world.

In-gong read it quickly and handed the letter over to the curious Chris and Felicia.

"Baikal orabeoni."

Felicia nodded and turned to ask Flora a question. She asked in a friendly tone,

"Flora, was there anything else?"

"I've been told that in addition to 9th Prince, the same letter has been delivered to the mansions of the other princes and princesses."

The letter was an invitation to all the children of the demon king. Chris smiled and said with narrowed eyes,

"A tea party involving all the children of the demon king. This is the first time."

In the first place, it was rare for all the children of the demon king to be gathered at the castle.

Caitlin, who wanted to get close to the other children of the demon king, thought the idea of a joint tea party was brilliant.

Felicia alternated looking between Chris and Caitlin and shrugged.

"Like Baikal orabeoni said, a gathering like this is uncommon. Even if everyone is gathered, we will soon scatter. Anyway, isn't Baikal orabeoni very busy?"

Not only did Baikal take missions as the eldest son of the demon king, he was also on the forefront as a general.

He spent most of the year on the frontlines, so he didn't stay at the Demon King's Palace.

A joint tea party.

All the children of the demon king gathered in one place.

The expression in Chris' eyes became complicated.

"I don't feel like it."

As expected from Chris.

It was rare for the lycanthrope siblings to attend official events, so it went without saying that the result would be the same for information gatherings such as tea parties.

'Certainly, he didn't attend in Knight Saga either.'

Although it was different this time, Baikal had held several joint tea parties in Knight Saga. The participants had been different every time and there were some who never participated.

Caitlin's expression became grumpy as she heard Chris' murmur. Her eyes asked, 'Will we also be absent this time?'

Chris pinched Caitlin's cheeks. He laughed and turned toward In-gong.

"However, this time, we won't be alone. I will follow everyone's will."

Caitlin's eyes widened. She turned towards In-gong and Felicia, and Felicia spoke with a mischievous expression.

"The purpose itself isn't bad. I don't think Baikal orabeoni will be orchestrating something bad. Though... it is a little uncomfortable meeting Zephyr orabeoni and Anastasia unni at this point."

So, was she participating or not?

Felicia felt Caitlin's nervousness and nodded with a loud laugh.

"I will participate."

"I will follow Felicia's will."

Silvan agreed. In-gong was the only one left.

"Shutra?"

Caitlin's voice was impatient. Instead of answering, In-gong raised his arm slowly with a very serious expression. Caitlin's expression showed 'restlessness' while Felicia and Chris tried not to laugh.

In-gong said with a smile,

"I need to participate. There is no reason not to."

Caitlin's expression became brighter. It was like a flower was in full bloom.

"It is nice to have a good relationship between siblings."

"Sword Duke."

The sword duke interrupted their conversation with a laugh and got up.

"Prince, I will go back now. I will be sure to go out the front gate."

The sword duke had visited the 9th Prince's mansion.

The meaning of that one fact was quite large and it was impossible for the sword duke to not know the meaning of it.

"Thank you for your consideration."

In-gong shook hands with the sword duke.

"I don't know if I should be praised for that. Also, if possible, I'd like to see you once again before you leave. I am curious about the progress of the Divine Sura Authority."

"Okay, do check our achievements before we leave."

Silvan's eyes shone as he heard the conversation. His nervous face resembled Caitlin's, who was eager to participate in the tea party.

However, Silvan could not get any words out. This was due to another person speaking.

"If you're leaving, go quickly. Why are you talking for so long?"

Amita slammed their tail against the ground angrily. The sword duke laughed and looked down at Amita.

"I'm glad that you're so cute."

"What cuteness? I'm not cute!"

Amita protested, but it wasn't very convincing.

The sword duke didn't stay any longer.

"I'm going."

He said briefly and left. Flora hurriedly followed behind the sword duke.

Amita glanced after the sword duke, then looked up at In-gong.

"I'm tired. 9th Prince, can you give me Earth Quaker and White Eagle now? I will work on it immediately."

Having Amita as his personal craftsman was something In-gong had never dreamt about until now. Amita's head would be full of the readjustment for the next week.

Felicia quickly interrupted.

"Amita, what about Silvan's sword?"

"Don't pressure me, no pressure."

Amita looked up at In-gong and he nodded, pulling out White Eagle and Earth Quaker from his inventory.

"Thank you, Amita."

"Yes."

Chris, Caitlin and Felicia knew about the inventory, so they didn't react... but Silvan was surprised by the sudden appearance of White Eagle and Earth Quaker.

However, no one explained it to Silvan, and Amita wasn't curious.

Amita used their ability to float White Eagle and Earth Quaker in the air, then looked at Daphne.

"Daphne, I'll finish the embroidery in the workshop."

"Yes, Amita."

Daphne picked up the embroidery and left the room with Amita. Now, only the royal children and their aides remained in the room.

Felicia sank back onto a soft chair and said,

"I would like to rest, but I think we should talk about the schedule."

They would leave the Demon King's Palace in one week. There were many things to do in the meantime.

"Baikal orabeoni's tea party is a tea party, but there is also another meeting. It's a meeting with the concubine children who follow Chris and me. Additionally, we should invite any concubines who want to join our faction."

Now that they had created a faction, it was time to fill it up.

Chris spoke as well,

"It is a little difficult to meet the nobles because there isn't much time left. Still, it will

be good to meet the dark elves.”

Due to 4th Queen Elaine, the lycanthropes gave their support, but the dark elves were still on the fence. Although Felicia and Silvan supported In-gong, compared to the lycanthropes, their support was uncertain.

He had met the 4th Queen, Elaine. So, sooner or later he would need to meet with the 3rd Queen.

In-gong recalled the Demon King’s Palace before shrugging.

“Let’s just have a large scale social gathering.”

In Knight Saga, meetings like these were coordinated by the butler and escort knight, Nayatra. This time, he would entrust the work to experts and not bother with the matter seeing as he had Chris and Felicia.

Felicia narrowed her eyes and said,

"Let’s invite the concubine children the day after Baikal orabeoni’s tea party. There will be rumours about the invitation, so they will try to gather information about we are doing and question us.”

Chris nodded in agreement.

Carack represented the others in the group as he asked,

“Uh... Princess, isn’t it just a tea party?”

Why did things like ‘gather information’ and ‘question’ suddenly come out?

Felicia sighed and said with a bitter expression,

"On the surface, yes. Inwardly, it is different.”

It wouldn’t be easy. They didn’t know about Baikal, but Zephyr and Anastasia would be present. In particular, Anastasia alone was a problem.

Caitlin’s face became depressed at Felicia’s concern. It was far from the friendly



gathering that she had been expecting.

Chris saw Caitlin's expression and changed the topic.

"By the way Shutra, why did you pick Evian? Is it because of General Vandal?"

Felicia was also curious about this. If they looked at it objectively, Evian was the worst choice.

In-gong replied lightly,

"That's correct. We met during the Red Lightning tribe mission. I wanted to meet someone who I knew and missed. I also want to strengthen ties with General Vandal."

He didn't say that he wanted to take Vandal as a subordinate after a head-to-head showdown.

However, Chris nodded when he heard 'strengthen ties'.

"General Vandal... he is obviously outstanding. It would be nice to increase your standing with other generals, but strengthening ties to Vandal is a good choice. I am convinced."

Chris had decided to support In-gong, but he wouldn't do it without thinking. He needed a reason for In-gong's actions.

"Though, isn't there another reason?"

Carack said, scratching his chin. It seemed like he had spoken without thinking.

Perhaps due to Carack's influence, In-gong also answered without thinking.

"There is a place nearby that I would like to visit."

"Where do you want to go?"

The confused Felicia asked. In-gong recalled Nayatra and said,

"Um, do you know Takar's slave auction house... What's with all these faces?"

Felicia's eyes had narrowed while Silvan's eyes had widened, and Chris had simply burst out laughing.

Caitlin was the only one confused, and Chris started talking,

"Shutra, don't you know what the city of Takar and Takar's slave auction house is?"

"Eung?"

In-gong recalled the Takar slave auction house that he had seen in Knight Saga.

Takar, the city of entertainment and pleasure.

It was the so-called red light district of the Demon World...

And the slave auction house was called Takar's flower. There were more skin colours there than any other place in the Demon World.

"Hrrmm, I see. Shutra picked Evian due to Takar's slave auction house. There must be something you want to buy there."

Felicia's eyes were cold.

"Ah, no. So..."

In-gong tried to come up with an excuse, but there was nothing to say.

He couldn't say that he wanted to go to the slave auction house to buy a slave, and not just any slave, but a succubus.

'Ah, no. I'm just trying to get my subordinate, Nayatra, back.'

As In-gong didn't say anything, Felicia's eyes became colder, while Silvan clicked his tongue. He knocked against In-gong's shoulder and said,

"Well, it is natural to be curious about such things. It is understandable."

Silvan winked as he spoke. Of course, he only had one eye, so it looked like he was just

closing his eyes.

“Unni, what is Takar?”

Caitlin asked and Felicia whispered into Caitlin’s ear. Caitlin’s face turned red instantly.

“Shutra is too much.”

What was this?

As the women’s eyes turned cold, Chris knocked against In-gong’s shoulder like Silvan had done and left the room with the others. Now, only In-gong and Carack remained in the room.

In-gong sighed deeply and Carack watched from beside him. He said with a warm smile,

"Prince, you are also a man."

In-gong sighed again and Green Wind appeared out of nowhere to hug him.

Early the next morning, In-gong visited the large library.

However, it was as he had feared. His merit level was still low, so he could only visit the surface level of the big library.

He searched through various books in the library all morning but couldn’t find any traces of the Four Knights of the Apocalypse or the extinct species.

Fortunately, there were quite a lot of books about the elder dragons, so In-gong picked out several books that would be helpful.

‘I’ll have to enter the depths to get more accurate information.’

Unfortunately, it seemed necessary to wait.

In-gong spent time in the library reading books about the elder dragon, then went to

practice with Caitlin. He almost visited Amita's workshop several times but couldn't see anything properly since Amita wasn't finished.

So after four days, it was two days before their departure.

The day of Baikal's tea party.

# Chapter 107

## Test #6

Knight Saga often had tea party events.

Zephyr, the protagonist of the Demon World, could hold them himself or he could accept the invitation of the other royal children.

The function of the tea party was a social meeting. As it wasn't an official event like the court gathering, it was smaller in size, but a greater degree of socialization was available.

The tea parties were for collecting and exchanging information, discovering new talents, maintaining their reputation and various media play.

'Sometimes the "haha" and "hoho" along with the tea and cakes makes it seem far from a meeting.'

Although it wasn't a court gathering, In-gong was dressed formally when he climbed into the carriage that Flora called. Felicia, Silvan, Caitlin and Chris were already on the carriage as they had decided to go together in order to show that a new faction had formed.

Felicia was wearing a white dress that contrasted beautifully with her brown skin. Among the members here, she was the most experienced with tea parties. She was well aware of the 'correct meaning' of the tea party.

On the other hand, Caitlin accepted the tea party at face value and was laughing. Her rosy cheeks and sparkling eyes showed that she had high expectations for this.

She had on a subdued blue dress, and Chris was looking out the window with a scruffy face. He was dressed in a black suit similar to what he had worn to the court gathering, but it was obvious that he didn't want to participate in the tea party.

Silvan was looking more colourful than usual, looking like a sailor wearing a dress suit.

Chris looked at Silvan who had shifted to make room for In-gong. It seemed like it was burdensome for Silvan to sit directly opposite Chris.

Once Carack and In-gong took their places, the carriage started moving again. Five of the royal children and four aides were on board, but it didn't feel crowded because it was a large carriage.

Baikal's mansion was located in the eastern part of the Demon King's Palace, and it looked more like a military fortress than a mansion.

The overall impression was sharp and pointed, while the dragon sculptures in various places created a sense of oppression.

Baikal's troops were draconians. The blood of a dragon ran through them, so the people in the mansion would have considerable combat power.

'Indeed, the 1st Prince...'

Even if the order of birth was unrelated to succession in the Demon World, the eldest son was still the eldest son. As the first born and child of the demon king that had lived the longest, he received more expectations and support than the other children of the demon king.

It was one year ahead of Knight Saga, so In-gong wasn't sure of the current situation, but Baikal should be getting more support than Zephyr from the draconians.

If he had to estimate the ratio, it would be 3:2.

With only 60%, it wasn't a species-wide support, but the draconians were so fearsome that it was more than the support that some of the other royal children received.

They were guided to the reception room where the organizer of the tea party, Baikal, welcomed them.

"Everybody came together."

Baikal was a young man with neatly brushed hair who gave off a pleasant impression.

The pair of horns on his head, which could be called the symbol of the draconians, pointed straight to the sky and seemed to reveal Baikal's straight-lined heart.

He was tall and broad-shouldered, but his muscles weren't big like Chris and Carack.

The eldest one was Silvan, but he was Felicia's escort, so he allowed her to greet Baikal first. It was a bit ambiguous since they were twins, but due to the female centered nature of the dark elves, Felicia was always the first to say hello.

Felicia bowed elegantly.

"Thank you for inviting me to the tea party, Baikal orabeoni."

"Thank you for accepting my invitation."

Baikal embraced Felicia and Silvan lightly, then turned to Chris and Caitlin.

Chris greeted him first,

"It is great to see 1st Prince."

He didn't kneel down, but the greeting was reminiscent of the court gathering. Baikal gave an embarrassed smile at Chris' distant attitude.

"Chris, don't be so stiff."

"Thank you for your consideration."

Chris still answered formally, so Baikal couldn't help frowning. However, that only lasted for a moment. He greeted Caitlin with a bright expression,

"Isn't this the first time I've seen you outside of a court gathering? It is great to see you, Caitlin."

"Yes, Oppa."

Caitlin responded shyly. Baikal laughed at how Caitlin's reaction was a completely different reaction from Chris' and hugged her.

Finally, it was In-gong's turn.

This time, Baikal greeted him first.

"Shutra, it has been a really long time since I've seen you face to face."

"Yes, Hyung-nim."

In-gong responded smoothly as he looked into Baikal's eyes.

It was because there was no information about the original relationship between Baikal and Shutra.

'Maybe there weren't any exchanges.'

The draconians, Baikal's mother's side, and the Gandharva, Shutra's mother's side, were enemies.

However, Baikal then said words that In-gong couldn't imagine.

"Isn't it your birthday pretty soon? The gifts this year are insufficient. I will send it to your mansion on your birthday as always."

In-gong panicked. Birthday? Did this mean that he sent a birthday present every year?

In-gong was reminded of the Day of Massacre.

Baikal had held the bodies of his siblings and sobbed. He had been furious at Zephyr and had gone crazy.

If it was Baikal, he might actually be interested in Shutra.

Baikal would know roughly when In-gong's birthday was. Perhaps he had sent a couple of gifts a year. As the oldest, Baikal would care for Shutra, who was the youngest son. Despite not being children of the same house, they were still children of the demon king. However, no one else had cared about Shutra.

"Thank you."



There was sincerity in In-gong's voice. Clearly, In-gong's reaction had pleased Baikal as he then said in an affectionate voice,

"It is natural between siblings. I should pamper you a bit more."

His bright smile matched his tender voice.

Baikal led the party towards the reception area. There was already a guest who had arrived first.

"Zephyr came first. Zephyr, say hello to your younger siblings."

Just like the others, Baikal treated Zephyr as a sibling.

At Baikal's words, Zephyr looked at In-gong's party and bowed slightly.

Felicia and Silvan laughed like they had expected this, while Chris sneered.

...And In-gong was convinced.

If Baikal was the light, then Zephyr was the darkness. It would have been awkward if Zephyr laughed and welcomed them like Baikal.

Zephyr, who had long blood red hair, didn't reveal his feelings but gave off an enormous presence just by sitting there.

Baikal sighed like there was nothing he could do and assigned a seat to each of the party members. Silvan, Felicia, Chris, Caitlin and In-gong were all seated opposite Zephyr.

They didn't wait long since the time had already been set. After finishing the seating arrangements, a bell sounded to announce the arrival of 3rd Prince Victor and 4th Princess Anastasia.

Baikal also greeted Victor and Anastasia with a bright smile. The two of them were seated beside Zephyr, with Anastasia naturally being a considerable distance away from him.

Finally, all nine of the demon king's children had gathered. Baikal, who sat in the

organizer's seat, started the tea party with some prepared tea and cookies.

As Felicia had predicted, Baikal led the conversation into a friendly chat. However, he avoided topics that seemed somewhat sensitive, such as In-gong and the sword duke. It seemed as though he was going to avoid all topics that would stimulate competition.

Chris kept silent, while Silvan only occasionally participated in the conversation as he concentrated on eating the cookies and drinking the tea.

The conversation flowed primarily between Baikal, Anastasia, Felicia and Caitlin.

Whenever Anastasia pulled out a topic about In-gong, Felicia would cut her off and Baikal would change the subject. Caitlin mostly listened, but she occasionally helped Baikal with the transitions.

In-gong tried not to be conscious of Zephyr, who had remained silent since he first greeted them. His attitude was similar to the court gathering.

Victor kept a watchful eye on In-gong throughout the conversation. It seemed like he was trying to look for something.

In-gong consciously took a step back. When looking at it on the surface, Baikal's tea party proceeded fairly cheerfully. Most of the siblings didn't participate in the conversation, and Zephyr was sitting at the table.

The demon king didn't want his children to harm each other. There was competition between the royal children, but there were to be no attempts on each other's lives.

After all, they were siblings. Even Victor, who was staring at In-gong, didn't have the slightest intention of provocation.

The one who changed this atmosphere had been Zephyr.

He had heightened the sense of crisis and made them do serious things to each other. Zephyr had planted the idea but hadn't suffered.

The lycanthrope subjugation had been the peak. The demon king's children no longer believed in each other and had even hated each other. The minimum safety line had collapsed.

Then the Day of Massacre began.

The children of the demon king hadn't been able to gather together and every one of them died at Zephyr's hands.

That was why In-gong wanted to become the demon king. He didn't want such a future.

Anastasia suddenly turned to In-gong. In-gong smiled politely at her and Anastasia smiled back. There was an intense light in her eyes but no sense of hostility.

Baikal's tea party was completed. Victor had looked disgruntled as the tea party continued on, but that was all.

Baikal was satisfied with this alone. The important thing was that they had a face-to-face conversation.

Victor and Anastasia left first, then In-gong's party stood up to follow.

Just as they were about to leave the reception room...

"Shutra."

A low voice captured everyone's attention. It was Zephyr who had stayed silent so far.

He reminded In-gong of the demon king at the court gathering. Zephyr made everyone nervous just by talking to In-gong.

"Give my regards to General Vandal."

The sentence was short, but it had many implications.

In-gong replied with a blank expression,

"Yes, Hyung-nim."

Zephyr didn't say anything more, and Baikal, who sighed as if he had seen something unbelievable, hurried In-gong's party out.

As soon as they climbed into the carriage, Felicia slumped down and complained,

"Hah, I'm tired. Exhausted. Tea parties with Anastasia unni are always hard. How about Caitlin?"

Felicia was exhausted after her conversations with Anastasia throughout the tea party. She had been fine until she entered the carriage, so it was a truly impressive performance.

Caitlin smiled at Felicia's question and replied,

"It was difficult but fun."

Caitlin was like a field of blooming flowers. She was also a child of the demon king, so she used the things that she saw and heard. This meant her expectations had been low in the first place, making her satisfied with how it actually went.

"Silvan oppa?"

When Caitlin asked, Silvan pondered for a moment before responding with a very serious expression,

"The cookies and tea were delicious."

Felicia sighed at his heartfelt appreciation.

"Aigoo, I hope you were comfortable. All of you just left it to me. I didn't expect much from Silvan in the first place, but I thought that Chris would help at least."

Felicia cried out, and Chris just snorted.

"Noonim did very well alone. I didn't feel the need to interrupt. Well done, Noonim. I can always rely on you."

Felicia pouted at Chris' words. It was a sight that could never have been imagined a few months ago.

Caitlin glanced between Chris and Felicia with a huge smile, then Felicia hugged Caitlin like she was a doll.

"Anyway, tomorrow is the tea party where the concubine children are invited. It is different from today since they are people we want to introduce to Shutra and our faction anyway. Relax and play games. Then after that, we will leave on our missions. You should have a good sleep today and tomorrow."

In-gong had always left right after the court gathering, but this time, there was a lot to do.

However, there was still tomorrow. As Felicia said, they would have to leave for the missions the day after tomorrow.

"Shutra, it is good that you chose Evian."

Chris said suddenly. It was clear that he was thinking about Zephyr's last words.

Felicia nodded in agreement.

"Does Zephyr orabeoni also want to strengthen ties with General Vandal? General Vandal is very popular."

If In-gong hadn't chosen Evian, Zephyr would have.

Why did Zephyr speak at the end?

Was it a simple strike? Or was revealing that he was aiming for Vandal a diversion? Maybe it was just a ploy to confuse In-gong.

Anyhow, like Chris said, it was good that In-gong had chosen Evian. In-gong would use this opportunity to take Vandal away from Zephyr.

As the topic moved to Evian, Caitlin narrowed her eyes. She spoke with a face and expression reminiscent of Felicia a few days ago,

"Shutra, will you really go to Takar?"

How should he answer?

In-gong stayed silent instead of talking, and Felicia and Caitlin started murmuring to each other.

The next morning, In-gong's party gathered early in the morning before the second tea party.

"This Amita has finished!"

Amita, who had been stuck in the workshop for a few days, ran into the parlour and shouted,

Silvan stood up excitedly.

"Ohh, my sword?"

"No, your sword isn't finished yet. The readjustment of White Eagle is what was completed.

Amita answered coolly and Silvan's shoulders slumped as he sulked. In-gong held back his laughter and asked Amita,

"Earth Quaker?"

"Sooner or later, sooner or later! I will stay up all night and finish it by tomorrow morning! And shouldn't your reaction be, 'Ohh, show me?'"

"Ohh, please show me!"

In-gong instantly cried out along with Caitlin.

Amita shrugged like they felt better and said,

"Huhum, follow me to the workshop."

Their tail waved in the air, and In-gong's party hurried after Amita.

“Master, I have become great. I think that you should compliment me.”

# Chapter 108

## Test #7

“Master, I have become great. I think that you should compliment me.”

Green Wind declared as soon as he opened the door of the workshop. Due to being in a solid state, people aside from In-gong could see Green Wind.

Amita’s workshop was dual structured, and the door to the inner workshop, which could be called Amita’s real workplace, was closed tightly. In-gong looked at the stone table that Greenie was sitting on and asked,

“Greenie, you’ve become great...?”

“Of course. So amazing that... uh, wait! I am not Greenie! Master, I hate when you call me that!”

Green Wind nodded gently, then shouted suddenly. She kept nagging him despite being visible to others.

"Green Wind..."

Karma said in a small voice from where she was standing in the corner. There was a complicated expression on her face.

As Carack comforted Karma, Amita jumped on the stone table and slapped Green Wind.

"Get out of the way, you're covering everything."

“Uhum.”

It was true, so Green Wind had nothing to say. She simply jumped down from the stone table.



Amita stood where Green Wind was just sitting and pulled out White Eagle from a wooden crate.

It was mysterious that the shield was floating in the air, but this was a familiar sight to In-gong's party.

Carack gazed at White Eagle closely and tilted his head.

"Uh... did you just add the black border?"

The original White Eagle consisted of a gauntlet for the left arm and a shield capable of being mounted on the gauntlet.

The shield was the main body of White Eagle, but despite Amita's readjustment, there wasn't much change in the appearance.

Black metal plates were added to the edge of the shield which was all white.

Carack's question made Amita click their tongue.

"That is the case when just looking at the outside, but these are separate things. Green Wind?"

At Amita's call, Green Wind nodded with a confident expression.

"Look carefully, Master. You will definitely want to praise me."

As her name suggested, Green Wind dispersed into green wind and returned to White Eagle.

Then a green light emerged from White Eagle. So far, there was no difference from the original, but that changed with what happened next. There was a metallic sound and the black metal plates at the border of White Eagle spread out widely. As more things appeared in the air, the shield doubled its size in a flash.

The width was 1.5 times wider and the length of the shield was also impressive. The additional embellishments caused the shield to become a long diamond shape.

The additions to Carack's shield had flown from Amita's workshop. However, the

additional parts added to White Eagle had appeared in the air, as if they came from In-gong's inventory.

Amita raised their chin and explained,

"In the first place, this is a relic of an elder dragon. It's not like I put a gimmick on this. Moreover, that isn't all."

Once Amita tapped their finger, a metal sound was heard again, and the white and black parts separated into two.

"Separation?!"

Carack cried out with shock, and Amita waved their tail with a delighted expression.

"The white shield and black shield—should they be called White Eagle and Black Eagle? The basic performance will be carried out by White Eagle, but Black Eagle will be very useful. It has been blessed by the last flame."

White Eagle and Black Eagle stood side by side in the air.

Green Wind then took a solid state once again and appeared in front of In-gong.

"Now, I will be able to protect Master twice as much. When they're combined as one, the defense is stronger. Isn't this a good idea?"

'So, go ahead to pat my head and praise me!'

That's what Green Wind's eyes seemed to be saying. However, rather than responding to expectations, In-gong's eyes narrowed as he asked,

"It is great, but... can you fly both at the same time?"

One person was steering two objects. There was no easy way to drive one fighter jet while steering another remotely.

Green Wind blinked at In-gong's question and looked over at White Eagle. Looking at her expression, it seemed like she had never thought about the steering difficulty.

"I- I can do it. I can definitely do it. I will do it, kul."

She started off with an uneasy voice but became confident at the end. Green Wind now had the noble expression of a higher-order guardian.

Amita looked at Green Wind's back and clicked their tongue.

"I originally made two additional pieces for a total of three separate shields, but... I thought that two would be easier to steer."

Green Wind flinched after hearing that the original plan was three shields. Amita continued speaking,

"You don't have to worry so much because there is some degree of automatic steering. I entered some defense patterns just like the guardian shields used by magicians."

"S-speaking so much is useless. Talking raccoon, quickly explain the next function."

Green Wind cried out with a red face. Amita laughed before turning their gaze toward White Eagle.

"The original curtain of light is still there. Well, rather, it has been adapted to attack more efficiently. Green Wind?"

Rather than becoming the wind, Green Wind flicked her fingers, and a defensive green light curtain was activated from White Eagle and Black Eagle.

Then the next thing...

"Oh."

In-gong exclaimed unknowingly with admiration. The curtain of light had become a narrow blade when Green Wind flicked her finger again.

It was like a green light blade had been attached to the edge of the shield.

As In-gong reacted, Green Wind excitedly changed the blade into a variety of shapes and sizes. He could feel that the power of White Eagle had tripled.

Green Wind combined White Eagle and Black Eagle into one then turned it around.

“Look carefully, Master. Now the space behind the shield is widened, so it is possible for Master to fight on top! Would you like to take it for a ride?”

Green White changed White Eagle to the size of a small surfboard. It felt like a snowboarding device that could be attached to his feet.

White Eagle flew through the air and landed in front of In-gong. He climbed up, feeling that it was definitely more stable than before.

“Ohh.”

As In-gong let out a sound of admiration, Green Wind nodded with a satisfied face.

"You may fly through the sky with the strange blue cloth, but my existence is solid."

He could hear a lot of worry in her voice, and she couldn't hide her deep sense of relief.

In-gong stroked Green Wind's head, and she was deeply pleased.

It was at that moment...

"Strange blue cloth? What are you talking about?"

Amita asked with a confused expression. In-gong blinked at that, but he soon understood. He had forgotten to talk to Amita about it.

"I obtained one more relic of an elder dragon from Sun Lake. I forgot to tell you that it is a cloak that transforms into a muffler."

Amita was a blacksmith that dealt with swords and armor, so he hadn't thought that Amita would handle clothes. Moreover, there had been no reason to report it to Amita at the time because he hadn't known they wanted to readjust the elder dragons' equipment.

Amita's eyes widened at In-gong's explanation. They were very interested.

In-gong asked with a smile,

"Its name is Night Watch. Do you want to adjust it as well?"

Amita jumped. Green Wind, who was more than twice as big as Amita, shouted hurriedly,

"Ah, no! Talking raccoon! Don't take away the value of my existence! B-but it is also necessary for Master... uhh..."

As Green Wind fell into agony, In-gong stroked her head gently and looked at Amita. Amita's eyes were burning intensely, but they showed some restraint.

"Ummm. There is no time. I'll do it later."

There truly was no time as In-gong was leaving the Demon King's Palace tomorrow.

Silvan, who had stayed quiet since his arrival in the workshop, spoke up,

"Amita, please don't forget my sword... '

"Ah, I'll give it! I'll give it to you tomorrow morning!"

Amita hit their tail against the ground and cut off Silvan's words. Silvan stepped back sullenly.

As Felicia comforted Silvan, In-gong mounted White Eagle on his left arm.

'Indeed.'

By increasing the size of the shield with White Eagle and Black Eagle, the defense area had increased. Additionally, overlapping the two into one would make the defense significantly stronger.

In-gong consciously separated White Eagle and Black Eagle and tried to navigate around them. Not surprisingly, he felt much safer compared to when there had only been White Eagle.

"It is really awesome. I am looking forward to Earth Quaker."

"Huhu, let's hope for the best. Whatever you imagine, I will show you even more."

Amita said with a smile. Then Daphne, who had been the assistant for the past few days, hugged Amita from behind.

"Master."

Green Wind called out to In-gong, and he understood her meaning. He stroked Green Wind's head and said,

"Great, Green Wind. But I am busy today, so next time."

"Umm... I understand. I will endure it."

Green Wind nodded with a despairing expression and disappeared.

"Well, is it over now?"

Felicia asked, and Amita nodded. They had shown the result of White Eagle, and there was nothing else to share with In-gong's party.

"Okay, then let's go back to the reception room to prepare it for guests. Today, we'll have to be fully prepared for the tea party."

It was only a couple of hours before the concubine children would come to visit.

Felicia clapped and got everyone's attention, then said to In-gong,

"Shutra, do you understand that you are the protagonist today?"

"I know."

His status window also said that he was the protagonist.

The party hurried out of the workshop.

The day passed quickly.

The concubine children who followed Felicia and Chris weren't the only ones who attended the tea party. The concubine children who had been deeply interested in In-gong for a few months visited the mansion as well.

Of course, this was through invitation, so it went through some type of screening process. The potential spies, such as Cadaroph who had been with Daphne the other day, couldn't attend the tea party.

Felicia had made the purpose of the tea party clear,

"The tea party today is just for introductions. Think of it as the process of identifying who is standing on our side. Of course, you should also be aware that you are the head of our faction."

It made sense to make bonds by talking to the people who belonged to the faction and impress the people who followed Felicia and Chris.

The afternoon tea party was short and sweet. It ran for only two hours, but they had been able to accomplish all their purposes.

'Blood Knight Silas.'

Along with Daphne, he was the only one of the concubine children who needed to be obtained.

He would be leaving with Chris tomorrow. It was a bit unfortunate that he was following Chris and not In-gong, but that wasn't a problem at all. After all, following Chris was the same as being in In-gong's faction.

The next morning arrived.

As promised, Amita appeared before Silvan, who had spent the night in In-gong's residence.

"Here."

Amita seemed more tired than usual. They handed a sword in a plain sheathe to Silvan.

“Thank you.”

Silvan swallowed his saliva and pulled out the sword slowly. A silver sword resembling the sword duke’s, without any decorations, was revealed.

Silvan gazed at the sword with a fascinated expression, but Felicia started frowning. Compared to the White Eagle she had seen yesterday, Silvan’s sword was too shabby.

"Amita, does Silvan’s sword have something like an ability to combine or transform?"

"What type of sword would have the ability to transform? It is just a sword!"

Amita slammed their tail against the ground.

'No, why would a shield have transformation elements?'

In-gong had the same thoughts as Felicia but decided to hold back. Silvan’s expression was filled with pure joy as he held the sword.

Silvan swung the sword through the air like a person possessed by something. The blade of the sword cutting through the air was very light.

Amita asked with a smile,

“How is it?”

“Good. Really... it is good.”

There were no other words to express it.

‘Just a sword.’

It existed for the basic purpose of stabbing the enemy.

Amita’s words were true; the other features weren’t needed.

Silvan was satisfied with this sword. That could be seen the moment he held it in his hand. It was a feeling that gave him goosebumps.



It was a sword that could be wielded freely, like an extension of his body.

For others, it was just a good sword.

However, this sword was tailored for Silvan. It was a perfectly coordinated sword that could only reveal its true value in Silvan's hands.

"I see that you've figured out the truth. It was worthwhile to create this for you."

Amita laughed heartily, and Silvan shed tears of excitement.

"And 9th Prince."

Amita turned toward In-gong with a somewhat uneasy expression.

"There is still a bit of fine adjustment needed for Earth Quaker. Can you perhaps wait half a day? The work is almost over, but I need time..."

They had stayed up all night, but it seemed like it was impossible to finish on time.

In-gong nodded.

"It's okay, Amita. You don't have to worry because we are going together."

"Hu, yes. Then wait just half a day... What?"

Amita jumped with surprise. In-gong spoke with a casual expression,

"You will go with me on the mission and can make the readjustments then. I've already asked the last flame."

"Uh, when?! When on earth?"

"Yesterday, shortly after leaving the workshop..."

In-gong laughed.

He had originally intended to take Amita, even if Earth Quaker's adjustment wasn't late. Amita still had a lot of equipment to make, so why should they stay at the Demon

King's Palace.

However, Amita couldn't accept reality. They waved both of their hands, and their eyes shook violently.

"Ah, no. The last flame wouldn't have done that!"

Then one hour later, in front of the transport formation...

"The last flame..."

Amita carried a large bag on their back, just like at Spider Forest, and sat on the ground like someone who had lost their country.

In-gong and his party greeted each other while neglecting Amita.

The first one was Chris, who was heading to the south with Silas.

"Go safely."

"Yes, look after Caitlin and Felicia noonim."

In-gong smiled at Chris while Felicia pouted.

"You should be asking me, me."

She whined, but her eyes were smiling. Chris said pleasantly,

"Noonim is sometimes quietly selfless. Don't overdo it."

"I won't overdo it."

Felicia covered her face with a fan while replying. After laughing, Chris patted Caitlin's head and said goodbye.

As Chris and Silas moved through the transport formation, Felicia looked back at everyone.

"Then is it our turn?"

Silvan was scheduled to leave on the Black Flame Dragon. The other royal children had gone to their respective areas through the transport formation, and now only In-gong's party was left.

"I'm going, Oppa."

"Yes, Felicia. Stay safe until we meet again. And Shutra, please look after Felicia."

In-gong nodded and held out his hand to Silvan for a handshake. Felicia covered her face again, but this time she was laughing.

In-gong, Caitlin and Felicia stood next to each other on the transport formation, followed by Daphne, Karma, Delia and Seira.

Carack grabbed Amita's neck and lifted them up.

"Raccoon person, I'll make sure that you are comfortable."

Amita waved their hands and legs after being lifted by Carack, but it was useless.

In-gong smiled at Amita, then let out a breath.

There was a mission outside the Demon King's Palace...

And there would be confrontation between the Death Knight and the Demon King's Palace.

There was also Zephyr who had left for Haragal...

And Vandal and Nayatra who he would meet in the future.

In-gong suddenly looked around. As promised, In-gong looked at Caitlin.

A red light shone from the floor.

There was a bit of noise, and the transport formation activated.

# Chapter 109

## Auction

There were two protagonists in Knight Saga.

The protagonist of the Demon World was Zephyr Ragnaros, the strongest and worst demon king in history.

The other was the warrior, Locke, protagonist of the Human World.

The story had begun in the Demon World in year 513, when Zephyr Ragnaros received a new mission from the Merits Department.

Whereas Locke's adventure had started in the summer of Year 514, when Locke left the temple he had grown up in to go on an adventure.

At the beginning of winter in Year 512 that changed to Year 513, Zephyr had left for the north to carry out a mission.

So, what was Locke doing now?

In Knight Saga, he had invaded the Demon World with an army and eventually killed the demon king.

In-gong closed his eyes and searched through his memories. Then the appearance of a big bookshelf popped into his head.

There was a total of five books. Compared to the large bookcase, the number of books was embarrassingly small, but In-gong didn't care. Anyway, it was a bookcase that no one else could see.

All five books described the elder dragons. They were the books he had borrowed from the library and read once.

He thought about one of them, then the part he wanted automatically came up in his head. It was vivid as though he had photographed the book.

It wasn't the so-called 'photographic memory' ability. It was a little bit different, but the end result was similar.

In-gong had 'conquered' the books he borrowed from the library.

Thanks to that, he could recall them any time he wanted.

'I read all of it roughly, but... it really is a fraudulent skill.'

A Conquest Knight could conquer and dominate all things. This applied to books as well as techniques, so he was eager to test out the applications.

What else could he conquer? Could he apply the power of Conquest to everything?

However, first, it was time to look at his memories.

The five books in the library varied from simple storybooks to history books. Each had a different story about the elder dragons, and according to the books, there were many more stories not present.

However, there was one thing they had in common.

In-gong simultaneously recalled different pages of the five books.

The disappearance of the elder dragons...

The Great Enkidu, who had lived in the Jishuka Mountains, had suddenly left his treasures and dungeon for another place.

It had occurred approximately 1,000 years ago. One of the dwarf keepers had left a record of this behind.

The time when Violent Kaltein had last been seen was also similar. It couldn't be guessed precisely as to when because the record left behind by the dwarf and the storybook were created at different times, but it was close to 1,000 years ago.

There were no records related to Watcher Ainkel, but because of Green Wind, In-gong knew that Watcher Ainkel had been murdered 1,000 years ago.

The rest of the elder dragons were in similar situations. The witness reports, such as for the Brutal Talia, were cut off long ago, and it was important that they hadn't appeared anywhere in the last 1,000 years.

'The only exception is Guardian Queian.'

There were no records found in the books of the library, but In-gong knew about him thanks to Knight Saga's setting.

During the past 1,000 years, Guardian Queian had acted several times in the Human World.

Five of the six elder dragons had disappeared from this world 1,000 years ago.

Watcher Ainkel had been killed and Violent Kaltein's dungeon had been violently destroyed by someone.

If so, perhaps the others were the same. There had probably been a big fight 1,000 years ago that wasn't revealed on the surface of the history records.

The Four Knights of the Apocalypse...

And the four people who selected them—

In-gong recalled some information that might be helpful in the present situation.

'Guardian Queian's lair is hard to pass through... but is it possible to guess the location of the Brutal Talia?'

If he looked at the places where the elder dragons' legends were based, he could guess the locations of their lairs.

The records of Brutal Talia were concentrated in the northern cold zone.

Considering that Talia had the power of the cold, it was an interesting combination.

'It isn't too far right now... My next target should be obtaining Talia's equipment.'

Queian's lair was in the human world, while the lair of the last elder dragon, Record Keeper Torres, was hard to pinpoint due to the records talking about the entire Demon World.

After he finished thinking about the elder dragons, In-gong put away the virtual books and opened his eyes.

Even without his sight, he could tell the location just through hearing and scent. In-gong was in the middle of a grassland with dry wind.

Just like Thunderdoom Fortress, Evian didn't have a transportation formation, so he had to move to the closest area with one.

As always, there was a guide at the transportation formation. Fortunately, this one was a man. The party and their supplies moved on carriages towards Evian.

One day after their departure...

In-gong was riding Maybach, whom he had not seen in a long time. White aura and green magic power were tangled together and rotating in each of his hand.

'Okay.'

Even while he had his eyes closed and mind occupied with other thoughts, In-gong could operate aura and magic power as naturally as breathing.

Moreover, it was not simply operating; the aura and magic power in front of him were pushing at each other and creating a synergistic effect.

When using Gigantic Piston and Dragon's Bane, he had been unconsciously using aura and magic power simultaneously.

In-gong didn't use mana for specific skills but added magic power to the aura itself.

The result was successful. All actions that used aura, as well as Divine Sura Authority, had become faster and stronger.

'It is a pity that I didn't meet the sword duke again.'

The sword duke had promised to meet again during his stay at the Demon King's Palace, but he unfortunately had to leave the next day.

He didn't know any of the details, but it seemed like the sword duke needed to leave in a hurry.

The demon king had mentioned the sanctuary.

Perhaps there was something wrong with the sanctuary that the sura were guarding.

"Shutra."

"Huh?"

He had thought he was alone when he heard a voice next to him. In-gong looked around to see Caitlin approaching him on a stunning black horse.

Caitlin looked down at In-gong's hands and asked,

"That— What are you doing? Are you operating aura and magic power at the same time?"

"Yes."

Caitlin's golden eyes lit up at In-gong's answer. She mumbled, "Amazing" a few times, then asked again with an excited face,

"Shutra, do you have any tips?"

Originally, aura and magic power would push against each other.

In-gong shrugged at Caitlin's question.

"There is no such thing... I just do it."

In-gong's words were unfortunate, but it couldn't be helped. He really just did it.



Caitlin frowned at In-gong's answer, then closed her eyes and activated her aura. Caitlin's blue aura and white magic power gathered on her right hand, but both of them disappeared instead of tangling together like In-gong's.

Aura interfered with the operation of magic power while magic power destroyed the aura's flow.

After several more attempts, Caitlin sighed and opened her eyes. She stared at In-gong and grumbled,

"Shutra is too much."

"What?"

"Too much."

Her grouchy expression was cute. In-gong tried to stop his laughter, but it was inevitable that a small smile formed.

On In-gong's other side, a new voice was added,

"That's right, Shutra is too much."

It was Felicia who was riding on a draco. As In-gong looked back, the voices continued,

"Right, too much."

"Way too much! Too much! It is too much!"

The last voice belonged to Amita who was riding on a horse with Daphne. Daphne became confused as the waving tail hit the horse.

He could understand why Amita was upset, but why was Felicia— no, Carack upset as well?

'Shouldn't I be the one saying that Carack is too much?'

In-gong looked at Delia, Seira and Karma who were beside Carack, then he looked back

at Carack. It was because he suddenly had an ominous premonition.

‘Surely, Nayatra won’t like Carack as well?’

He felt anxious. Despite there being no basis for this,, he couldn’t help the ominous feeling.

In fact, he didn’t even know why Seira, Delia and Sepira had started liking Carack in the first place. It seemed like he was an aide killer.

‘N-no. Nayatra can’t be the same.’

It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that Locke had a harem around him, however, Zephyr was different due to his grim nature. Therefore, his only hope in the Demon World was Nayatra, who was like a flower blooming in a desert.

While thinking about Nayatra, In-gong was reminded of something... There was one more problem.

‘What excuse can I use to go to the auction?’

If he were alone, then he would just go with Carack. However, right now, In-gong wasn’t alone. In order to avoid Caitlin’s and Felicia’s cold eyes, he needed a good reason to visit Takar’s slave auction house.

‘Well, there are a lot of assets to process right now.’

There were the goods from the dungeon and the ruin.

Even the dwarf weapons that he found in the dwarf cave hadn’t been processed yet. This was a chance to obtain Nayatra, but he should also use it to organize his things.

‘Slaves aren’t the only things sold at the auction house.’

There were various types of artifacts as well as various magic tools that could be used in battle.

There were valuable ingredients like elixirs and dragon hearts that could luckily be obtained if they had enough money.

In-gong looked at Carack's shield for a moment. Thanks to Amita joining them, the party could receive the best equipment, but it was still lacking. Right now, Carack was the only one who had received a shield from Amita. Weapons were still needed.

'Moreover...'

The materials that Amita could use currently were the leather, bones and scales from the black dragon and the sea serpent. Both were top quality materials, but there wasn't a variety of material.

If a variety of material were added, then Amita would be able to produce better and more unconventional equipment.

In-gong looked at Amita who started trembling. They felt something like a ominous feeling.

'I should go to the auction house to liquidate the assets and see if there are any good items.'

Just thinking about it convinced In-gong, and he nodded with a cheerful expression. Meanwhile, Caitlin was grouchy as she tried to join aura and magic power together a few more times.

As In-gong was thinking about how to comfort her...

'Master, a group of people are approaching from the front.'

Green Wind's voice entered his ears, and In-gong focused aura on his eyes. As Green Wind had said, a group of people were rushing towards them from far away.

"I just need to stop them here."

# Chapter 110

## Auction #2

Richard, one of the five captains of the Demon King's Palace, turned his gaze to a distant place.

He was in one of his dwellings at the Demon King's Palace, and the room was designed to allow adequate light to enter.

As he gazed into the sunlight pouring through the window, he touched the things on his desk gently.

His hand stopped on a seal made of wrought iron that only the members of the five families leading the draconians could use. Richard's hands were rough from holding a sword his entire life, and even among draconians, his hands were particularly big and hard.

He wasn't alone. A few steps away from him was a young man called Henry, who was particularly prominent among the children of the five families.

Richard was a man with blonde hair that was reminiscent of a lion's mane, and a pair of long white horns stretched from his head. He had just been listening to Henry's report.

He had known the answer since a few days ago, so this was just a procedural check.

"Do you know what you have to do?"

Richard asked Henry who was standing with a stiff expression. Henry hesitated for a moment then nodded.

Instead of blaming Henry, Richard just laughed.

The instructions that Richard had given Henry a few days ago were simple.

‘Attack 9th Prince on his way to Evian.’

The people behind the attack wouldn’t be soldiers from the Demon King’s Palace or draconian warriors. It would be someone who had been kicked out from the Evian military and was already a wild dog.

The aim wasn’t to kill 9th Prince; Richard just wanted to learn more about him.

9th Prince’s appearance was too sudden. Therefore, Richard didn’t know much about him.

What type of person he was, how strong he was now and his fighting style...

Richard wanted to know all these things. He had no thoughts about taking away 9th Prince’s life.

The demon king—the sura king, Mitra didn’t want that, and Richard didn’t intend to go against the demon king’s will.

However, he couldn’t help letting some words escape from his mouth.

"The demon king said that the strongest person should become the demon king. His thoughts haven’t changed. But to not want a direct fight between the successors... This is a bit contradictory, isn’t it?"

His tone was moderate, but Henry could hear the growl of a lion in it.

The strongest person would become the demon king.

Yet it wasn’t acceptable for the siblings to harm each other while contesting for the position of demon king.

It was a contradiction. How could there be no fighting when they were trying to determine the strongest?

There were the factions. Competition between factions existed, but it was all about spying and gaining information.

The 4th Princess—she had the blood of the serpent-like 2nd Queen Titania, so she

used both females and males. No, she didn't fear any violence at all. She had drunk the tea given by the 1st Prince without any hesitation. The tea party was in a place widely known to everyone, not a secret location that no one else knew about.

Yet the 1st Prince had laughed and poured tea, and the 4th Princess had drunk it without any hesitation nor fear of poison.

This was despite the fact that it was tea from the 1st Prince.

They had lived for 20 years without suspicion of each other.

However, could a real power truly be born in this type of environment? What did missions matter when they would return to a greenhouse that was the Demon King's Palace?

Richard laughed once again.

"That face looks like you want to say something. So, tell me."

With Richard's permission, Henry stood next to him. Although he wasn't a small child, the problem was that his loyalty to the demon king was too strong.

Unlike Richard's bright blonde, Henry had dark hair and blue eyes.

"When he was kicked out, he was at the level of the lower generals, but he is different now. His strength will be at the level of an intermediate general."

"Yes, I know how strong he is. That way, I can also measure 9th Prince's strength."

"Uncle... no, Captain. If 9th Prince dies..."

"6th Princess and 8th Princess is with him. So, dying won't be a problem. And even if one of them loses their lives... it is a matter that doesn't involve me. Moreover, we are being hit by the enemies on the periphery. 1st Prince and 2nd Prince have already experienced an encounter with the enemy. We have nothing to do with this."

Richard interrupted Henry's words and said it was inconsequential. He knocked against Henry's shoulder.

"Henry, what are you afraid of? Such a thing will never happen. If I really intended to do that, then I would have used a much stronger person."

This logic reassured Henry, but it was only for a second. In the end, the fact that someone strong was ambushing the 9th Prince didn't change.

Richard spoke in a calm tone,

"Maybe he will receive an injury that will make him give up his mission or doubts will start to form."

It was only a matter of planting a few suspicious buds. However, that wasn't bad enough. He was going to change the current atmosphere, little by little.

"Tomorrow, we will return to the northern front. Be prepared to leave."

At Richard's words, Henry departed the room with a stiff expression. Richard stared at his back and laughed.

"9th Prince."

Only a few months ago, he had been known as the Prince of Scraps, and now, he had created a new faction.

Richard didn't know how many skills the sword duke had taught him.

'I can't possibly guess.'

Would he notice that the ambush was instigated by someone?

Even if he did, it would be impossible to find the person behind it.

The mad dog was a draconian, but he was already a notorious enemy in the vicinity of Evian.

This would lead to some doubts and a sense of crisis. Richard's purpose was to plant seeds of doubt, and that was enough.

It would also be good if 9th Prince didn't notice at all. There would be no problem in

achieving his desire to know 9th Prince's abilities.

'I never thought it would begin with the 9th Prince.'

Richard stopped touching the seal, and his gaze moved in the southwest direction where 9th Prince was.

"Things are never easy."

Carack said with a bitter smile as he prepared to fight. The group of people running wildly towards them were enemies. They had to either run away or prepare to fight, but the former action was unreasonable.

In-gong's eyes narrowed.

"I think you are right. I think it is because of me."

"Huh? What does that mean?"

Instead of answering Carack, In-gong just laughed. He had seen a familiar face at the front of the rushing group.

"Richard is doing this."

In-gong muttered in a small voice. He was sure of it.

It was an event that he had experienced many times in Knight Saga.

In Knight Saga, Zephyr had gradually worsened the relationship between the demon king's children. He had made them suspicious until they thought they would be killed if they didn't strike first, ruining the relationship between siblings.

This was one of the processes. The ambush at Evian—rather than aim directly for the royal children's lives, it was an operation designed to disturb them and cause suspicions.

The one behind this wasn't Zephyr but Richard.



The royal child attacked was always different, but the person doing the ambush was the same.

"Mad Dog Jiks."

The soldier who had joined them as a guide agreed with In-gong.

"T-that's right. Mad Dog Jiks!"

Fear, confusion and doubts were all seen on his expression.

Mad Dog Jiks was notorious around Evian. However, his activities were far from here, so it was the first time the soldier had seen him. He was just able to tell due to Mad Dog Jiks' unique characteristics.

"Shutra?"

Enemies had appeared in front, but it had been an unexpected ambush. So, she wondered how he knew.

"I was prepared."

"What?"

Felicia replied with a dumbfounded expression, but it was only for a moment. The fight was about to occur soon. Rather than continuing to ask questions, Felicia was convinced by Shutra's words.

In-gong heard Green Wind's voice once again.

'Master, it isn't just at the front. If I count all the enemies... '

"Around 40? Most of them are cavalry?"

"That's right. How did you know?"

"Everything was dragged out."

Mad Dog Jiks was a real mad dog.

Although he had never been ambushed while playing as Zephyr, Richard had been his sponsor, so he had been able to learn more about the mad dog's abilities.

Among the intermediate generals, Mad Dog Jiks was average.

Before the Starlight Core, Caitlin wouldn't have been able to win against him. In fact, victory wasn't guaranteed even with the Starlight Core.

'But what if it isn't Caitlin?'

"Shutra."

"Huh?"

In-gong turned around. Caitlin, who was prepared to fight while sitting on the black horse, was staring at In-gong.

"What are you thinking of right now?"

Did her wild intuition sense something?

Instead of answering, In-gong smiled towards the front, and Caitlin's eyes narrowed.

After fighting so many monsters in Spider Forest, the party remained relatively calm despite the 40 enemies. Only the guide soldier became speculative.

"Prince, what do you want to do?"

Carack asked him. In-gong equipped Earth Quaker and White Eagle. After Amita's adjustments, Earth Quaker gave a low roar as it glowed red and yellow through the black scales.

It was an ambush event, but he had no intention of losing. He would smash through Richard's intentions.

In-gong nodded thoughtfully. Instead of answering, an angry white aura was activated.

Mad Dog Jiks had left the army for almost 10 years now.

However, he never forgot that the blood of a draconian flowed through his body.

One of the elder draconians, Richard, had ordered him to attack the 9th Prince and learn his skills. It didn't matter if there were injuries, but he was ordered to not take their lives.

However, Jiks wasn't displeased. He couldn't take their lives, but that didn't mean he couldn't do other things.

Besides 9th Prince, there was the 6th Princess and 8th Princess who were renowned for their beauty. Touching them would incite the retaliation of the dark elves and lycanthropes, but he didn't think that far. Why else did he have the nickname of mad dog?

'If I do this, I will need to flee from the Demon World.'

Mad Dog Jiks' logic was simple. The task assigned to him was to fight 9th Prince and report on his skills. Apart from that, he could do anything.

Instead of a horse, Jiks rode on a big wolf as he made some hand gestures. He had trained each member himself and was certain they would be elites if they were in the Demon King's Army.

There were 40 of them, so it was clear that the 8th Princess would struggle.

'I wish to taste her with my own hands.'

He had already forgotten about the fight with the 9th Prince. Jiks was just considering a confrontation with the 8th Princess.

It was at that moment that...

The 9th Prince ran out alone. He wasn't riding a horse or even a draco.

Jiks laughed and whispered, 'I'm not the only crazy one.'

However, it was only for a second. Jiks' instincts screamed at him, and he used his aura reflexively, using the dragon authority that all draconians had inherited.

This wasn't the time to relax. He pulled out his sword hurriedly. The reason for this was simple.

'So fast!'

The dozens of meters between himself and 9th Prince felt meaningless. 9th Prince didn't stop and ran straight toward Jiks. In just a few seconds, he brutally trounced all the people in his path.

Two shields emitting a green light opened the way. His men couldn't even do anything as they fell to the ground with a moan. It happened so quickly that they couldn't perceive the fact that 9th Prince was among them.

The next moment, 9th Prince was standing right in front of Jiks.

Kwang!

With a roar, the white aura exploded in the air. Jiks swung his sword reflexively to block the blow and felt a strong pain in his right arm. It was hard to hold the sword. Moreover, he couldn't keep his current position any longer.

Lightning struck in front of him. The moment it struck the wolf's head, blood poured from it. Jiks hurriedly threw himself backwards off the wolf, but the pair of black shield and white shield kept tracking Jiks. Jiks swung his sword to block the path of the shields. He succeeded in stopping the orbits of the shield but lost his sword in the process.

Jiks had bought some time. He needed the time to refine his aura management technique. It was only a few seconds, but he needed this time to calm his breathing and draw power.

However, 9th Prince didn't allow it. He was overly quick and reached Jiks again.

Jiks grabbed a spare sword hurriedly and swung it roughly with his left hand through instinct. Of course, he was quick and strong due to his aura, but his opponent was also

an aura user. So far, he hadn't managed to deal a fatal blow to 9th Prince.

Yet there was a sensation at his fingertips. His blow had struck the 9th Prince's chest.

'How?'

He was amazed that he had gotten a blow in. However, Jiks wasn't a novice, and that was why he knew that he hadn't succeeded because he was lucky. It was because the opponent allowed it.

'Why?'

Moreover, why was 9th Prince smiling so happily in the midst of this painful situation. Surely, he wasn't enjoying this?

The reason didn't matter. Jiks used the time to try and pull out an extra sword. However, an invisible force crushed Jiks' arm. There wasn't a gap that allowed him to fight.

"Thank you."

Jiks couldn't tell if those words were actually said or just seen through the eyes.

9th Prince laughed as he made a fist, then something white and green exploded in front of him.

The moment that Jiks was struck in the chest, the shock was greater than the pain.

9th Prince's fist...

It was filled with the dragon power that was the aura characteristic of the draconians.

# Chapter 111

## Auction #3

‘A success!’

In-gong smiled with satisfaction as he looked at his fist containing the dragon style.

The dragon style had added a new power to In-gong’s aura.

In Knight Saga, there were slight differences in the auras of each species.

A lycanthrope’s aura was characterized by momentary explosive power. The various techniques of Divine Beast Authority were developed towards exploding aura due to the fact that the lycanthropes specialized in this.

Just as the name implied, the dragon style was based on the power of a dragon. Dragons reigned at the apex of all species, so their power was efficient in many areas.

Even if they had the same amount of aura, the dragon’s style was much stronger than other auras. It was also easy to add various attributes to the aura, and it was easy to handle the aura in various ways, such as through emission or focusing it on one spot.

In-gong had conquered a piece of Ainkel’s dragon heart, but he hadn’t been able to use the dragon style until now. Additionally, in the past, In-gong had always the delicate aura unique to gandharvas.

However, after gaining the characteristics of a dragon, his aura had become stronger and more violent than before. It was like riding a wild horse.

Instead of continuing to attack Jiks, In-gong brought his left hand to his chest and used recovery magic.

‘Hurts!’

The pain was truly not a joke. The strike that contained the dragon style was stronger

and sharper than he had expected.

However, the pain was also good. In-gong swallowed back the pain and laughed.

On the other hand, Jiks was stunned when he was pushed backwards. 9th Prince was a gandharva and sura, so how could he use the dragon style? Perhaps 9th Prince wasn't the son of the demon king? Or maybe he was the child of a female draconian, not the 5th Queen.

Jiks stopped thinking about it. He would explore the secrets of 9th Prince's birth later. He was called mad dog for always going on a rampage, but he had survived to this day due to his excellent fighting instincts.

The blow had increased his distance with 9th Prince. Additionally, 9th Prince didn't attack immediately.

This was an opportunity for Jiks. He gathered his aura hurriedly while his left hand grabbed something. Then Jiks threw a pouch toward 9th Prince, causing a blast of violet smoke to fill the air.

It was poison. It had been made by collecting various infectious poisons around Evian and was unable to be neutralized with magic due to how terrible it was.

He would buy some time with the poison. After adjusting his breath and gathering aura, he would attack the poisoned 9th Prince.

Jiks used the time to try and pull out an extra sword. He took one step back and refined his breathing, but his plan only went well up to here. This was because there was something happening which he didn't know about.

[Hundred Poisons Resistance is activated.]

[Hundred Poisons Resistance is activated.]

[As a result of the resistance against the rare poison, Hundred Poisons Resistance has been upgraded to Thousand Poisons Resistance.]

[Poison resistance has increased greatly.]

Fire Arrow and the various recovery spells needed to be used many times to increase their levels.

Hundred Poisons Resistance wasn't much different.

The other day, Hundred Poisons Resistance had already reached its maximum level. Now, due to the rare poison, it had progressed to the next level.

In-gong breathed freely in the smoke as he headed to Jiks. He rushed over and shouted unknowingly,

"Truly, thank you!"

After the dragon style, it was Thousand Poisons Resistance!

In-gong smiled brightly and activated aura and magic power simultaneously. In-gong's magic power, which originally possessed the attribute of a dragon, matched well with the dragon style. Compared to before, the synergy effect of the combination between aura and magic power was superior.

Jiks was confused. 9th Prince had smiled after being hit, and he was now thankful for the poison. No matter how Jiks looked at the situation, it clearly wasn't normal.

"Hat!"

Jiks swung his sword. It wasn't the time to be confused.

Jiks' blade was fast and sharp. He had wandered in the wilderness after being kicked out of the army, but his skill was real. If they were just discussing pure martial arts skill, he was much better than In-gong.

'Master!'

Green Wind cried out, and there was a sharp metal sound at that same moment. Black Eagle moved between In-gong and Jiks and blocked the sword. However, the strength of Jiks' sword was so powerful that Black Eagle's orbit was altered, and Black Eagle hit the ground instead.



In-gong regained his composure, erasing his smile as he moved toward Jiks.

However, Jiks didn't panic. Now that it was just a competition of strength, it was difficult to reverse the situation, but a draconian's superior physical ability made it possible.

Sparks flew as the battle between In-gong and Jiks continued. Neither side was able to gain an advantage. White Eagle and Black Eagle flew back to In-gong's side, blocking Jiks' sword, while In-gong exploded with a storm of attacks that contained the dragon style.

Jiks clenched his teeth as he fought In-gong. He also used dragon style to respond to In-gong's attacks, which In-gong counterattacked in an unexpected place.

However, all of Jiks' attacks were in vain due to White Eagle and Black Eagle. There seemed to be no end to the frontal confrontation.

'I have to dig into it.'

He never thought about breaking through In-gong's defense. He just needed to penetrate the gap between White Eagle and Black Eagle.

All of 9th Prince's movements were aimed towards attacking as he believed in the two shields. If he could penetrate through the trajectory of the shields, he would be able to get a critical hit.

Jiks started emitting dragon style randomly. It was inefficient, but thanks to that, he was able to delay In-gong's offensive. Jiks took a big step back and widened his view, which had only been concentrated on In-gong. This was because the easiest way to get In-gong's attention was to pursue his companions.

Jiks had brought along 40 people. Some subordinates had been lost due to In-gong's mad rush, but there were still 30 left. Moreover, this wasn't a small number as each one of them were trained elites.

However, as soon as Jiks expanded his field of view, he was forced to swallow back a pained groan.

8th Princess was literally going crazy. Blood was pouring down her body as she acted

far more violently than 9th Prince. His men were being torn apart by the unbelievable power springing from that slender body. 8th Princess couldn't afford to look after 6th Princess, but it was clear that 6th Princess was also putting up a good fight. Due to the brilliant magic bursting from her, his men couldn't approach at all.

6th Princess defended while 8th Princess and 9th Prince attacked crazily.

Jiks narrowed his field of view again, focusing only on In-gong.

It was fight or be killed. In that case, he would fight like a mad dog. He should at least use all his strength to bite 9th Prince's neck.

Jiks rushed at In-gong. In-gong avoided it and turned to face Jiks.

White Eagle and Black Eagle were circling In-gong. Jiks not only focused on In-gong but also on the movements of White Eagle and Black Eagle. The trajectory of the two shields around him was relatively simple.

Jiks was looking for a gap. He would go through that gap to deal a blow to 9th Prince!

Immediately before colliding with In-gong, Jiks changed directions suddenly. It was an abrupt movement as he swung his sword.

In-gong's eyes naturally turned toward the sword, and they widened. As soon as Jiks swung the sword, the blade split into dozens of pieces as it flew toward In-gong.

The pieces of the sword were manipulated by the dragon style and pierced through the gap between White Eagle and Black Eagle. All the pieces flooded toward In-gong.

It was at that moment...

In-gong turned into a dark blue mist. The pieces of the sword flew through the air in vain.

Jiks was reminded of one of the vampires' lineage abilities. Surely the blood of a vampire didn't flow through 9th Prince's body as well? What type of bloodline did he have?

However, this was just a conjecture. In-gong hadn't turned into a dark blue mist.

It was a close-distance space jump.

This was a technique embedded in Violent Kaltein's Night Watch.

Although it was limited to three times a day, that was enough.

In-gong laughed as he appeared at a spot 10 meters away from his original location.

'Too bad for him.'

If In-gong was in Jiks' position, he would've had a tantrum. In-gong called White Eagle and Black Eagle. Instead of using dragon style, he activated the quad-core.

"Caitlin."

At his low call, Caitlin passed by In-gong's side. Thanks to the quad-core, she was much faster and more powerful than before.

As Caitlin ran ahead, In-gong soon followed behind her. He further amplified his aura by synchronizing it with Caitlin's.

In-gong and Caitlin moved as one in a pincer attack. An intermediate general like Jiks had no way of dealing with it.

Jiks had lost his sword. It was now impossible for him to run away.

In-gong and Caitlin took deep breaths at the same time. The two of them formed fists and crushed Jik's chest.

[Your level has risen.]

A white light surrounded In-gong as he heard the soft voice.

Caitlin, who had already seen it, looked at In-gong with wide eyes.

‘It reminds me of old times.’

He remembered how he had seen Caitlin right after the first major battle against the Red Lightning tribe. At the time, her whole body had been bloody just like it was now.

It was only a couple of months ago, but it felt like so long because they had been through many things in the meantime.

“Are you okay?”

Caitlin asked, tilting her head. In-gong was standing idly, so she wondered if something was going to happen.

In-gong laughed and said,

“Uh, I’m fine, but is Noona okay?”

“Yes, it isn’t my blood.”

Caitlin gave the same answer as before. In-gong laughed as he recalled the battle when they were rescuing Felicia.

“Shutra! Caitlin!”

In-gong and Caitlin turned their heads simultaneously at Felicia’s call. Felicia was waving and running towards them with Carack.

"Prince! Are you okay? He seemed pretty strong."

They had been watching the fight from a distance. In-gong scanned Carack up and down and said,

“Are you okay?”

“I’m fine. My shield protected me well.”

Carack grinned and stroked his shield.

In-gong looked around. The men that Mad Dog Jiks had brought were running away in

different directions. Almost all of them had died, so In-gong didn't chase them.

"I-indeed, a royal family. You managed to deal with the infamous Mad Dog Jiks."

The guide soldier, who ran over with Carack, gazed at Jiks' corpse and exclaimed with admiration. It seemed like he was more notorious than In-gong thought.

In-gong looked down at Jiks' lifeless body. He had been an outlaw who didn't hesitate to do actions like rape and murder. Thanks to him, In-gong learnt things like dragon style and Thousand Poisons Resistance.

'Yes, let me thank you one last time.'

Jiks still had more to give him.

In-gong asked the guide soldier,

"How much is the bounty on Jiks?"

The more money In-gong had, the better.

In-gong smiled at the number that the guide soldier stuttered out.

# Chapter 112

## Auction #4

The location of Evian was similar to the Demon King's Palace.

Evian, one of the peripheries of the Demon World, was at the east boundary. East of Evian was a place that would be called the Eastern Limit Line. Beyond that were the barbarians who chose to stay outside the Demon World instead of succumbing to the reign of the Demon King's Palace.

It wasn't just the location and seasons that determined the climate of the Demon World; there were some mysterious and wonderful elements due to the flow of magic power throughout the area.

Evian was a winter land all year round. As a result, it was virtually barren and the barbarians wandering beyond the Eastern Limit Line made it a difficult place to live.

However, it wasn't a land that the Demon King's Palace could leave alone. It wasn't possible to give the land to the barbarians who wouldn't submit to the Demon King's Palace.

The areas around Evian weren't very hospitable either. Basic laws existed in the Demon World, but there were no such rules around Evian. It was obviously a messed-up land with outlaws like Mad Dog Jiks running around. Takar was located near Evian and used this confusion to its advantage. Being a lawless zone meant that regulations and controls were weak.

Takar exploited this fact to become a pleasure ground. Things that would be done underground in other places were openly committed on the streets of Takar in broad daylight.

Takar paid a fair amount of taxes to the Demon King's Palace and the Demon King's Palace tolerated the existence of Takar instead of getting rid of them.

In-gong looked at the mini-map and thought about the movement route of the party.

There were two main ways to get to Evian Fortress, the ultimate destination of the party. One was via Takar, while the other was moving in a straight line towards Evian.

‘I need to go to Takar.’

It was ridiculous to stay for very long since they were heading for a mission. There was a limit to stopping for a while.

‘I can use the excuse of liquidating my assets that I thought of the other day.’

In-gong slowly nodded and looked at Felicia.

“Excuse me, Noona.”

Felicia, who had entered her sleeping bag early, stretched out her head at In-gong’s call. Her eyes were full of mischief.

“What? Do you want to go to Takar?”

It was a teasing tone, not cold. In-gong took a deep breath and opened his mouth.

"I think it would be good to cash in the treasures I gained in the dungeons."

"Hmm, I see."

Felicia’s eyes were full of laughter. As In-gong blushed without knowing it, she kept laughing.

"Yes, we should go with Shutra. I’ve decided that the meeting place is Takar."

"Meeting place?"

"Yes, aren’t the lycanthropes also coming to Takar?"

Felicia turned her head to the side and asked. The target of her last question was Caitlin, not In-gong. Caitlin, who was sitting in a comfortable position and circulating her aura, gently nodded.

"That’s right. It’s because Shutra wanted to go there."

Unlike Felicia, there was a little bit of distaste in her tone as she finished talking and stared at In-gong.

Felicia laughed as if she found Caitlin funny and spoke to In-gong again.

"I've coordinated it in advance. This is a military mission so it is a good idea to bring some troops as support. The support troops have been preparing for a week already."

In Knight Saga, there were always reinforcements from draconians during military missions. Even during the Red Lightning Tribe mission, Chris and Caitlin had more than 100 lycanthropes with them. It was natural for there to be reinforcements.

"The reinforcements can't use the same transportation formation as ours since their departure location isn't the Demon King's Palace. So they have to find one of the nearby transport formations, and there is a pretty big one in the vicinity of Takar. So the meeting place is there."

Felicia winked at the end of her words. It was already decided that they would meet at Takar before leaving the Demon King's Palace, yet she still became irritated when In-gong said he wanted to go to Takar.

Felicia just laughed at In-gong's expression. He took a deep breath as Felicia spoke again.

"Shutra, there is something else... the dark elves will be coming as well. So I mean..."

Felicia hesitated as she studied In-gong's face. Despite the military mission, In-gong couldn't receive any support from the gandharva. Felicia and Caitlin both received reinforcements while In-gong had none. Instead of being upset like Felicia thought, In-gong just smiled pleasantly.

"I'm fine. Thank you for taking care of me. In addition, I can think of them as my own due to Noona."

Apart from being in the same faction, this was Felicia, it wasn't like she was a stranger. Felicia's face turned lively again at In-gong's words.

"Isn't it?"



"It is the same with the lycanthropes." Caitlin quickly added. His greatest allies were probably Chris and the lycanthropes, since he hadn't met with the queen of the dark elves yet, so he just smiled at Caitlin.

Felicia giggled at Caitlin's interruption and spread out her fan.

"Well, we will be able to explore it properly. The meeting place is at Takar but it will take a day or two."

"Princess, why does it seem like you want to go more than Prince?"

The quietly listening Carack asked and Felicia just shrugged with a cheeky expression.

"Well, the auction house will be fun." Caitlin, don't you think it will be fun?"

"Unni has been to Takar before?"

Caitlin was immediately interested. Felicia nodded and tapped her fan against Caitlin's shoulder.

"I've already been a few times. So there is no need for a guide. The city won't meet Shutra's expectations."

"E-excuse me?"

In-gong muttered, but Felicia pretended not to hear him and looked over at Amita.

"It will also be interesting for Amita."

"Hmm, that noisy and busy place is too annoying."

Amita said in a rough voice as they pounded their tail against the ground. They were holding a large jewel in their hand and carving a complicated magic pattern on it.

"Talking raccoon, is the tuning still not finished?"

Green Wind appeared behind In-gong and asked. It had obviously been over a day since they left the Demon King's Palace but the readjustment still wasn't completed.

Thanks to that, In-gong was forced to use an Earth Quaker that wasn't finished yet.

Amita looked at Green Wind with grim eyes before pounding their tail again. "Of course it takes a long time without a workshop!"

Amita took a deep breath before speaking to In-gong. "But it will be finished by the end of tomorrow. So don't worry. It will definitely be finished before we arrive in Evian."

From the appearance, it seemed like the last task was carving the jewel and inserting it. Felicia reached out to Amita and said in a humble voice,

"Amita, don't be offended. I will buy you whatever you want in Takar."

"Bah, do you think that I'm a child? Don't think that I will be relieved by such a thing."

Then why was their tail waving?

Felicia held back her laughter as she looked over at In-gong who nodded. Caitlin, Carack and the rest of the group also laughed with their eyes, not saying anything out loud.

However, there was one person in the party who was unaware of this.

"Talking raccoon, your tail is waving."

Amita quickly stopped moving their tail at Green Wind's words, and In-gong made Green Wind turn off her solid state.

Takar, the city of pleasure, was divided into two major districts by a central wall. The poor entertainment area was outside the walls while the safe and colourful entertainments were inside the walls.

Outside the walls, the outlaws from around Evian gathered since the security was bad. Sword fights often took place in the gambling halls, the entertainment was in the streets and there were many large and small battles. Many forbidden items in the Demon World were openly sold by streets vendors.

Obviously, Felicia had visited Takar several times, but she'd been inside the wall, not outside.

Felicia headed straight down a relatively safe central road and talked to a gate guard. A few minutes later, a well-dressed man appeared to lead the party to a VIP place.

The place where they were guided had large rooms filled with brilliant colour. It was obviously a house to be rented out since there were several rooms. After unpacking and having a light rest, Felicia grabbed Caitlin and said to In-gong.

"Go with Carack. I'll go shopping with Caitlin. Amita, do you want to go with us?"

Instead of answering Felicia's question, Amita jumped into Daphne's arms. Daphne had a perplexed expression as she nodded on Amita's behalf.

Felicia smiled before turning to Carack who was standing beside In-gong.

"Carack, I'll ask you to control him."

"Leave it to me."

Carack hit his chest with his fist. In-gong just sighed.

"What do you think I'm going to do?"

"I guess we'll see?"

Felicia laughed while Caitlin sent a 'hrmmm' look towards In-gong.

Felicia spoke again.

"Let's meet in the afternoon. We need to participate in the auction at night, so be sure to come back before then."

Felicia finished and left with Amita and the other females first. The guide soldier had gone to meet the reinforcements so there was only In-gong and Carack left.

In-gong took a deep breath and said to Carack.

"Okay, then let's go to the slave market."

He would be able to get rumours about Nayatra's whereabouts from there.

Carack's eyes widened at In-gong's words.

"Huh? Are you really interested in the slave market?"

"I'm not interested. I have to check something."

"Um, I understand."

Carack nodded with a serious expression. Carack was really a good aide for In-gong. In-gong left the hotel with Carack and looked at several slave shops nearby. However, he didn't find anything.

"There is no slave called Nayatra."

He thought she might be using another name so he looked through the catalog of succubus slaves, but there was nothing.

'It is reasonable.'

In Knight Saga, Zephyr had met Nayatra at the end of Year 513. This was Year 512 so there was a one year difference.

'Should I take the next chance?'

In-gong entered the last slave shop with a face full of regrets.

Carack was looking at In-gong with a mixture of warmth and doubts, while In-gong searched through the succubus slaves. Instead of making fun or teasing In-gong, Carack asked with a serious expression.

"Is the succubus called Nayatra that important to Prince?"

"She is important."

It wasn't just because Nayatra was his subordinate in Knight Saga. She was the key to the lycanthrope subjugation.

Carack narrowed his eyes and asked.

"Well, Prince. Can you tell me what she looks like? I can ask the slave dealer. Once she comes in, the slave dealer can contact us."

"The method isn't bad."

Nayatra had appeared in the slave auction one year later, so it was likely that she would be in Takar within the next few months.

In-gong described what he remembered.

"Her hair is pink. Her face is beautiful, even as a succubus... a bit like Flora. I mean, the atmosphere. She has a cool personality like Flora. And there are two yellow horns on her head. Her height is like Felicia noona? Her skin is as white as Caitlin noona's and her eyes are blue..."

"Does she wear her hair in a ponytail? The ponytail is long enough to reach her hips."

Carack interrupted his description. In-gong's eyes widened.

"That's right, how did you know?"

Instead of answering, Carack pointed to a female talking to the slave dealer. She wasn't a slave but a customer who came to buy a slave.

And In-gong knew her name.

'Nayatra?'

The succubus Nayatra who appeared in the slave auction in one year.

Except right now, she wasn't a slave.

# Chapter 113

## Auction #5

It was an unexpected situation.

Nayatra wasn't a slave.

In fact, this was more natural. If he looked at the entire Demon World, the number of slaves traded was actually quite small. Apart from places like Takar, it was difficult to find a proper slave market.

Of all the places that In-gong had been to, there hadn't been a place exclusively for slave trading.

So, why had Nayatra become a slave?

What type of experience changed her from a free person into a slave in just one year?

However, now wasn't the time to deduce this. While In-gong was thinking, Nayatra had finished her conversation with the slave dealer. She turned and walked away.

"Nayatra!"

In-gong shouted reflexively, but Nayatra didn't look around and just walked away like it didn't involve her.

Instead of asking if he was mistaken, Carack started running toward Nayatra, and In-gong hurried to follow. There were so many people on the narrow road, but he still moved quite quickly.

Nayatra turned the corner. In-gong felt an ominous feeling the moment she disappeared from sight. In movies and novels, the person always disappeared after turning the corner.

It was the same in this case as well.

He turned the corner hurriedly but couldn't see Nayatra. Among the people present, there was no pink hair or even red hair.

In-gong looked around, while Carack peered over the top of the heads but couldn't see her either. Nayatra must have used stealth or something similar to disappear.

"She looks like the one you called Nayatra, but she ran away. There wasn't even a reaction."

Carack said while scratching his forehead.

She hadn't even blinked at her name being called and just continued on her way. Additionally, she had showed no signs of hurry.

Normally, people couldn't react like this unless they were prepared for the situation. There would usually be a small flinch or reaction.

Carack's common sense told him there were only two occupations with such behaviours: one was a thief and the other was assassin.

"Prince, is the relationship between the two of you bad?"

Carack asked In-gong with an expression of concern.

"It isn't like that. Nayatra doesn't know me yet. I was a little careless."

In Knight Saga, Nayatra was both a thief and assassin. If someone she didn't know called her name, it was natural for her to run away.

Carack was confused by the 'doesn't know me yet' but didn't ask any more questions. Instead, he comforted In-gong like a good aide.

"It isn't Prince's fault. Prince isn't to blame. She is just too familiar with the area.

His smiling expression was comforting. Was this why Karma, Delia and all the aides were crazy about Carack?

In-gong smiled after being reassured and spoke to the air,

"Green Wind, take a look around."

'I understand Master.'

Green Wind, who appeared in a solid state, turned into wind and disappeared. She would observe the area from a high location.

"Carack, let's go to the slave trader who talked to Nayatra."

In this current situation, it was In-gong's only clue. Perhaps he could get more information than expected.

As he entered the store, the trader, who had spoken to Nayatra, came up to him first.

"How can I help you?"

"There is something that we want to ask you."

Carack smiled widely and handed some money to the trader. In-gong didn't know how much was given, but it seemed to be an appropriate amount judging by the trader's expression.

Unfortunately, the slave trader didn't know that much about Nayatra or how to contact her. He knew that Nayatra had visited once a few months ago and was very curious about the type and number of slaves being traded.

When In-gong saw her, it had been her second visit. If there was a second visit, the possibility of a third visit was also high.

"I want to leave a letter."

In-gong gave a few ancient gold coins from the dwarf inventory to the slave trader. The trader's face brightened at the unexpected windfall.

"I'd be happy to lend you my writing instruments. Make yourself comfortable."

Based on his reaction, there was no need to worry about the letter not being delivered properly.



In-gong thought for awhile before writing the letter.

It was a letter with a brief description of how In-gong wanted to meet her as well as a way to contact him.

At first, it seemed innocuous, but it contained a secret that Nayatra couldn't ignore.

The next time Nayatra visited, the slave trader should contact In-gong after the letter was delivered, and he would be awarded with more ancient gold coins. Looking at his face, it seemed like In-gong's request would be fulfilled faithfully.

As he handed the letter over, he heard Green Wind's voice in his ears. It was a crestfallen voice.

'Master, I couldn't see her. I'm sorry.'

"No, good job. Thank you for the hard work."

In-gong stroked Green Wind's head. Then he returned to the other slave stores and started questioning them about Nayatra.

There were several more stores that she had visited with the purpose of knowing how many slaves they had.

In-gong left letters at all those stores. Carak, who was watching from the side, reassured In-gong that anyone would be curious after seeing so many letters.

'It isn't bad if I spend some money on Nayatra.'

Just as In-gong received information from the slave traders, Nayatra could also get information about the letters.

By the time he visited all the slave stores in Takar twice, it was late afternoon. It was now time to return to the hotel.

Even though In-gong returned to the accommodations with heavy steps, the atmosphere of the others were different.

'The talking raccoon has become a happy raccoon.'

Like Green Wind said, Amita had become happier as they sat on their tail eating sweets. Every time they ate, their body shook. So, they tried hard to maintain a calm expression.

"What type of candy is that?"

"I went to a sweets shop with Unni. Shutra and Carack should try it. It is really delicious."

Caitlin laughed at Carack's question and handed over the sweets. They looked like a bunch of mooncakes.

Although he didn't really like mooncakes, there was no way to turn down Caitlin's expectant eyes. In-gong picked up the smallest one and put it in his mouth.

"How is it? Delicious? Yes?"

"Yes, delicious."

It was as he had expected although the taste wasn't too bitter. It felt like he was eating a macaroon with a very high sugar content.

"Shutra? Did something bad happen?"

Caitlin inquired about In-gong's complexion. In-gong smiled and shook his head.

"I'm just tired from walking around."

However, the worry on Caitlin's face just increased further. Felicia frowned from where she was sitting on the couch and asked,

"Well, why don't you just rest and not go to the auction in the evening?"

"No, I don't know when I will be able to come again. I need to participate. And isn't there still a lot of time left? I will be fine after taking a break."

They would leave Takar tomorrow afternoon with the reinforcements. So, if he missed

this opportunity, there would be no way to participate in the auction for a while.

He had missed Nayatra right in front of him, so he couldn't miss the auction.

"Then I'm glad. If there is any trouble, just tell me. You don't have to overdo it."

"I understand. Then I will get some rest first."

In-gong entered the room that was assigned to him.

Then after approximately two hours...

The party of well dressed people gathered in the living room of the hotel.

Caitlin was wearing a cute yellow dress, revealing her shoulders which was unlike her usual style.

As In-gong's eyes widened, Seira laughed and whispered to Carack. It seemed like her usual dresses were due to Chris.

"Does it suit me?"

Caitlin asked with red cheeks. She was very excited about wearing a type of dress that she normally couldn't wear because of Chris.

In-gong looked Caitlin up and down and laughed.

"Caitlin noona is great."

As he mimicked Caitlin's reaction, Seira covered her mouth with her hands while Carack just laughed.

Caitlin looked coy, but it was only for a moment. Then she smiled widely again.

"What about me? Shutra, isn't this provocative compared to the Demon King's Palace?"

Unlike Caitlin, Felicia was wearing the same type of clothes. In other words, it was a purple dress with a high degree of exposure. Even though he was familiar with Felicia's style, In-gong still blushed for a moment.

Felicia laughed as she laid a shawl over her shoulders, then she evaluated In-gong's attire.

"Black suits you well. Don't you look a little more mature?"

In-gong usually wore a white suit to the court gatherings.

While Felicia and Caitlin were interested in In-gong's outfit, Seira and the other aides showed interest in Carack.

Delia approached Carack and said casually,

"Carack, your tie is crooked. I'll fix it."

"Oh, thank you."

"It isn't a big deal."

Delia smiled gently as she stuck close to Carack, while Seira, Karma and Daphne's eyes widened.

In-gong just sighed at the sight.

'Nayatra can't be like this.'

Of course, Nayatra still hadn't joined him.

Felicia laughed and approached In-gong.

"Well, I'll fix Shutra's suit."

In-gong had a bow tie, so there was nothing to fix, but he still accepted Felicia's helping hand.

Even if Takar was the city of pleasure, the auction house was just an auction house.

Not only were there various valuables that could be seen in any auction house, there were also things traded in the underground market such as the slave trade. Therefore, a huge amount of money passed through there.

The red auction house shone very brightly.

Sofas were arranged in a semi circle, and In-gong's party received a great spot in the center.

In-gong looked around from where he was sitting between Felicia and Caitlin. Due to the bright room, it wasn't difficult to see the faces of those attending.

"Then, I will start today's auction."

Everyone's attention became concentrated on the host, an incubus with red skin, who rang a bell on the stage. Amita, sitting on Daphne's lap, gazed at the stage with interested eyes and seemed to be feeling better due to the sweets.

The auction was quite interesting, but In-gong was looking around instead of towards the stage.

'My nerves are irritated.'

Somehow, there were a few recognizable faces. He had seen these faces while playing Knight Saga.

However, he didn't remember where he had seen them since they were either an extra or supporting character.

In-gong was searching through his memories when he suddenly looked at the entrance of the auction house. Someone had come in late.

Their body was substantially larger than Carack's. He had a pale face, yellow eyes and scar over his right eye. The black hair wriggled randomly like it was alive.

In-gong knew this face. Unlike the others, he clearly remembered where he had seen it.

'Paratus.'

He was the brother of the barbarian king Karatus, who ruled over the Eastern Limit Line to the east of Evian.

The memories continued... Paratus was one of the generals under the barbarian king.

Why had he appeared in Takar? Was it simply to participate in the auction?

In-gong shook my head. If Paratus coveted something, he would steal it, not buy it. It was clear that he had another reason.

"Carack, something unusual is going to happen."

In-gong whispered to Carack, who suddenly looked very serious.

"What is it? Is it better to go back straight away?"

The incidents that involved In-gong always turned out unusual. It was natural to be nervous.

In-gong felt somewhat sad but soon regained his spirit. Anyway, he was really worried about the situation.

"There is nothing definite... for the time being -."

Kwa kwang!

A roar coming from outside the auction house swallowed up the rest of In-gong's words, and In-gong and Carack stood up without talking.

# Chapter 114

## Auction #6

There were other people who were surprised by the explosions and stood up. The staff of the auction house tried to calm people down, but it wasn't enough.

"Dear customers! Calm down—"

The head of an auction house employee, who was shouting loudly, was destroyed. A barbarian warrior had murdered the employee with a huge hammer-like fist. Someone screamed, and there was an explosion from the auction house. As the auction house shook, flames were spreading everywhere.

In mere seconds, the auction house had become a mess. People were rushing around in the middle of the explosion, and the indiscriminate killing committed by the barbarians added to the confusion. The security personnel around the auction house couldn't calm down the situation alone.

"Prince!"

Carack exclaimed hurriedly. Instead of responding to his call, In-gong opened the mini-map and searched it.

The explosion had first occurred outside. Maybe it wasn't just the auction house but all of Takar that was attacked. No, it was reasonable to think so. Otherwise, the current situation couldn't be explained.

'A small strike?'

If a large number of barbarians had crossed the Eastern Limit Line, people would have already known about it already. It was obvious that they had to break up into small units in order to infiltrate the city.

In-gong saw that all the barbarian warriors were marked red on the mini-map. In-gong's allies were blue, while the auction house employees and general customers

were grey.

In-gong's gaze turned toward the brightest red dot. Paratus, the younger brother of the barbarian king Karatus and probably the mastermind of this incident, was heading towards the stage with a ferocious smile on his face.

In-gong sensed it intuitively. The purpose of this incident was evidently the auction items.

However, what type of item would make him do such a bold thing?

The ruler of Takar and the owner of the auction house, Vulcanus, was a tough person. He was sure to retaliate in some way.

In-gong couldn't think about it for long. The situation was desperate, but it was also due to the new blue dot that appeared on the mini-map.

The blue dot had appeared far away from In-gong's party and was moving quickly towards the stage. In-gong shifted his gaze hurriedly. Apart from his group, there was only one person in Takar who would be recognized as In-gong's ally.

'Nayatra!'

Nayatra was dressed in a black china dress that revealed her thighs. He was drawn back into his memories for a moment but quickly snapped out of it. Nayatra appeared deeply confused by the current situation.

"Prince!"

Carack shouted again. In-gong delayed no longer. He opened his inventory and armed himself.

In-gong equipped White Eagle on his left arm and Earth Quaker on his right arm, while Night Watch was placed around his neck and shoulders.

Earth Quaker had been tuned just before coming to the auction site, so it sparked with a red and yellow glow as it roared. In-gong glanced toward Caitlin.

"Noona, this is a request."



Instead of asking what he was talking about, Caitlin wound up her long dress. After freeing both legs, a blue aura erupted around her like flames.

Felicia asked in a confused voice,

“Shutra?”

“The barbarians of the Eastern Limit Line!”

In-gong shouted and ran towards the stage. He heard Felicia’s voice again from behind him, but the urgent thing was Nayatra.

As always, time flowed equally as it seemed both fast and slow. Paratus, who had jumped on the stage while In-gong was arming himself, killed the auctioneer in one blow. He threw a scroll that caused a huge explosion and headed behind the stage.

Nayatra moved towards the back of the stage as well. As expected, she was tracking Paratus from a distance.

In-gong jumped onto the stage and threw himself through the flames. At the back of the stage, the screams of the employees could be heard in succession.

“Paratus!”

In-gong didn’t know about the situation inside, so he shouted loudly several times. As soon as he arrived at the place where the auction items were stored, Paratus turned toward In-gong.

As expected, the auction house employees were almost all dead. Paratus had grabbed the neck of an orc security officer and was about to kill him.

Paratus glared at In-gong. Instead of paying attention to Paratus, In-gong looked at the mini-map and the area in front of him simultaneously. Nayatra could no longer be seen on the mini-map as she had gone into stealth. However, the pile of auction items couldn’t escape In-gong’s eyes.

‘The Dragon King’s Golden Helmet!’

He was able to recognize it at a glance because it was special among the A rank items.

As the name suggested, it was a golden helmet carved in the form of a dragon's head.

The Dragon King's Golden Helmet was a symbol of King Taratos, the legendary barbarian king.

He could now understand why Paratus was so reckless.

For those who didn't know the history, it was just a good golden helmet. However, it was different for the barbarians. It was an item that could strengthen the legitimacy of the kingship and elicit absolute support from the tribes.

Paratus squeezed his right hand and killed the orc security officer. Simultaneously, In-gong turned off the mini-map.

"Green Wind!"

White Eagle split into two and flew toward Paratus. While Paratus was surprised by White Eagle and Black Eagle that were emitting a green light, In-gong sprang forward.

Kwang!

In an instant, In-gong narrowed down his distance toward Paratus and ran past him instead of attacking. Paratus panicked, but White Eagle and Black Eagle acted under Green Wind and blocked Paratus' view.

In-gong arrived at the place where the auction items were piled up and reached out to the glass box containing the golden helmet. He had felt the anti-theft spell when he entered the auction house, but he ignored it. In-gong instantly conquered the spell and put the item in his inventory.

Paratus ignored White Eagle and Black Eagle and sprang toward In-gong. However, Green Wind blocked Paratus once again. White Eagle and Black Eagle created a green barrier that blocked Paratus' way.

In-gong didn't miss the gap created. He reached for the auction items piled up with the golden helmet. It was obvious that all the items would be destroyed when they fought here, and as expected, there were items he knew Nayatra was targeting.

‘Nayatra’s secondary occupation is a thief!’

Although she had been called Zephyr’s knight, Nayatra’s expertise wasn’t fighting but in infiltration and information gathering.

Due to this, In-gong had Nayatra perform more information gathering missions, instead of escort missions in Knight Saga.

Additionally, Nayatra’s ability as a thief shone every time.

He had used her skills in Knight Saga without thinking, but where had Nayatra learnt her thief skills? Was she an assassin and thief before she became a slave?

If had she appeared at the auction to steal one of the items, maybe she had been caught and turned into a slave.

It was just a guess, but everything fit.

Then as if to prove In-gong’s reasoning, he heard a swallowed moan. She was astonished to see the auction items disappearing as soon as In-gong’s hands reached for them.

"You bastard!"

‘Master!’

Paratus and Green Wind exclaimed. Instead of aiming for Paratus, In-gong triggered Night Watch’s Blink and moved to Nayatra. Nayatra turned her head at the blue fog, but In-gong had already grabbed her arm.

‘Master!’

Green Wind shouted again. It seemed like she had reached the limit of stopping Paratus.

“Carack!”

In-gong pulled Nayatra and used Call on Carack. Carack appeared with whirling eyes

and In-gong said quickly,

"Take Nayatra and leave here!"

"W-wait a minute!"

Nayatra cried out in a confused voice. Carack grasped the situation immediately and looked up at the ceiling with a surprised expression.

"Heok! Look at that!"

It was a tense and desperate situation, so Nayatra and Paratus reflexively looked up at the ceiling.

Just then, Carack moved. He hit the back of Nayatra's neck.

"Keok?"

Nayatra leaned forward with a pained moan. It was a situation where he had failed to stun her with a blow, but Carack didn't care. Nayatra wasn't knocked out, but she was defenseless. Carack carried her onto his shoulders and started running.

Both In-gong and Paratus were surprised by what happened in front of them, but it was only for a moment.

Today was the first time Paratus had seen Nayatra. Although unfamiliar things were popping up in succession, this was irrelevant to Paratus. The only thing that mattered to Paratus right now was the Dragon King's Golden Helmet.

In-gong regained his spirit as well. The process was quite violent, but he was able to secure Nayatra. He would chat with her later.

'Master!'

Green Wind called to In-gong once again. Her call felt somewhat sad. This time, In-gong produced white aura and green magic power simultaneously.

Paratus was in a frenzy because he couldn't get the golden helmet. Even if In-gong had come to defend Evian, he couldn't let the golden helmet pass into the hands of the

barbarians.

White Eagle and Black Eagle, which had been desperately interfering with Paratus, returned to In-gong's side. Earth Quaker responded to the dragon style by growling angrily as the scales darkened.

Paratus then triggered an explosive aura of vengeance. In-gong felt the creepy roar of a lion, but he didn't turn his gaze. He formed a fist and activated Dragon Blood.

Paratus, the brother of the barbarian king—he was considered a strong warrior even among the barbarians.

In-gong took a deep breath.

Then the battle began.

# Chapter 115

## Auction #7

In Knight Saga, it had been Year 515 when he fought the barbarians beyond the limit line.

At that time, Caitlin had been much weaker than she was during the lycanthrope subjugation in Year 516, but that was because she had still been a teenage girl.

The already mature Paratus would have a similar strength to Mad Dog Jiks. Paratus' strength was at least that of an intermediate general. However, he was much fiercer than Mad Dog Jiks, and he was also aiming for In-gong's life.

'The unique characteristic of barbarians is their Body Hardening technique!'

As the name suggested, it was a technique that strengthened the body. However, it wasn't a skill that could be acquired. Just as dragon technique required dragon characteristics, the barbarian's Body Hardening required a body that inherited the blood of a barbarian.

After triggering Body Hardening, Paratus' upper body swelled. The suit he was wearing tore apart in an instant, revealing a grey shell, that was like a crustacean's, which covered the skin. It went beyond strengthening the body and appeared more like he was forming an armour around it.

Paratus normally carried a large weapon in Knight Saga, but he was now bare-handed. However, In-gong wasn't fully alert, and Paratus didn't miss this moment.

Kwang!

A huge crack formed on the ground where Paratus had been, but In-gong didn't confront Paratus, who was like a runaway train. He avoided the blow quickly using Wind Style.

Kwa kwang!

Paratus's fist struck the place where In-gong was standing. The floor that was hit by the hardened fist cracked and dozens of stones flew up.

In-gong looked at the floor and Paratus at the same time. As In-gong used Wind Style again, he transferred aura into Earth Quaker.

Paratus turned toward In-gong. As White Eagle and Black Eagle rushed toward Paratus, In-gong poured aura, magic power and divine power into Earth Quaker.

It was a different feeling from when he fought Mad Dog Jiks.

There was no sense of incompatibility with Earth Quaker. It was as if Earth Quaker had been made for In-gong from the beginning. The flow of aura had also changed. Earth Quaker accepted In-gong's aura naturally. Not only was the aura absorbed faster than before, the absorption efficiency was even better now.

Amita had strengthened White Eagle externally; Black Eagle had been added, and there were new accessories.

Earth Quaker had been tuned, and the Great Enkidu's equipment was now reborn as In-gong's.

While In-gong focused all his consciousness on it, Paratus read White Eagle's and Black Eagle's movements and rushed toward one side. In-gong continued to inject aura into Earth Quaker.

It took a few seconds for Paratus to catch up with In-gong, who retreated again and activated Night Watch's Blink.

Blink was different from the magic installed in the transportation formations. It only moved a short distance, and there had to be no obstacles between the caster and the target destination. Night Watch's Blink could be used three times a day.

A dark blue fog appeared as the second Blink was triggered, and Paratus' punch went through the air. In-gong landed on the ground 10 meters away, but Paratus didn't stop and searched around for In-gong like a wild beast.

However, 10 meters was not a short distance, and Paratus narrowed the distance

between him and In-gong in an instant.

Instead of blinking or stepping back, In-gong ran toward the spot where Paratus had first hit the ground.

“You!”

Paratus cried out angrily. As In-gong kept on running away, Paratus was incensed.

However, In-gong just ignored it. Rather, he was hoping that Paratus would lose his temper. During the few seconds of time Blink had created, he inserted more aura into Earth Quaker.

Paratus had an ominous and urgent feeling. In-gong was focusing power on his right hand, and it seemed like a big thing that might explode at any moment.

Paratus roared loudly. The powerful energy from the roar was a weapon in itself. It would cause the body to freeze momentarily.

However, In-gong just ignored Paratus’s roar. In-gong had endured the gaze of the demon king. So, he didn’t even need to use the power of the Tears of a Dark Elf as he ignored Paratus’ roar and prepared the technique.

Paratus, who rushed toward In-gong as soon as he roared, hesitated. Indeed, he had the gut instinct of a beast. Instead of rushing toward Paratus, In-gong raised his fist high.

He couldn’t allow Paratus to get the golden helmet, but that didn’t mean he had to deal with Paratus here. Right now, Paratus didn’t have the golden helmet. It was In-gong who had it!

“True Destruction!”

This was Earth Quaker’s super special move. A white aura spread as In-gong’s knuckles hit the ground. Like collapsed dominoes, hundreds of cracks covered the ground instantly.

Paratus’ mouth dropped open, but In-gong hadn’t used True Destruction on Paratus.



Kwaaaaaang!

In-gong had seen the aftermath of True Destruction in Spider Forest, where the terrain had been destroyed. He had hit the ground directly, so it couldn't endure the pressure despite In-gong controlling the power. The thick stone floor, that was a few meters in diameter, broke into dozens of pieces, and Paratus fell along with the floor.

Takar's auction house was located in a sunny spot, not the shade. Furthermore, under the auction house, there was a wall with a high ceiling of approximately 20 meters.

In-gong, who had grasped the floor plan of the auction house from the mini-map, had no intention of having a full frontal battle with Paratus from the very beginning. The most important thing had been to secure Nayatra and the golden helmet, not fight the boss on the premises.

Thanks to Night Watch's ability to fly, In-gong flew up and stepped on White Eagle. He could hear Green Wind crying that she didn't want to lose to Night Watch.

In-gong looked down below. The damage was so enormous that it seemed like the building itself was going to collapse. Additionally, he couldn't see Paratus because he was buried in heavy debris.

In-gong was satisfied with this much.

It was unlikely that Paratus would die from this, but he would take a long time to climb back up. At that point, he might be blocked by subordinates of Takar's ruler, Vulcanus, and be unable to return at all.

In-gong stopped thinking about Paratus and flew in the direction that Carack had headed toward. It wasn't long before he found Carack's hiding place through the mini-map.

'Prince!'

Carack mouthed while hiding against a wall. He was hugging Nayatra tightly with one hand, while his other hand covered her mouth.

'A complete kidnapper.'

He felt sorry for Carack, but there was no other interpretation of the scene. In-gong jumped from White Eagle and approached Carack.

“There was the sound of fighting over there, so I had to hide.”

In-gong nodded. Carack was currently unarmed, and he was carrying Nayatra. He would be unable to counterattack properly, so going out would just lead to death.

“What about that big guy? I heard a huge sound.”

“I made it so he can’t chase us.”

In-gong responded and looked at Nayatra. He could only see half her face since it was covered by Carack’s large hand, but she was accepting the situation quite calmly.

It was indeed Nayatra, who had been called the ‘Ice Knight’ among Zephyr’s subordinates. Instead of struggling to escape from Carack, Nayatra stared straight into In-gong’s eyes.

Fear and wonder could be seen in that calmness. In-gong narrowed the distance with Nayatra, and instead of giving her the same greeting as when he had first encountered Vandal, In-gong delivered a name to her through magic.

‘Rafiseria.’

At that moment, Nayatra’s eyes widened. She tried to speak despite her mouth being blocked,

‘How— How do you know that name!’

Nightmares were a species known for indulgence, but there was a contradiction. Although they joined their bodies easily with others, they had one true love.

There was only one in their life, and once found, they would never betray their love. Even their parents weren’t allowed to know their true name. This name was something that only their true love would know.

‘The path that Zephyr used to learn it was a bit different though.’

A nightmare slave was forced to tell their master their true name. Since the name itself contained magic, the nightmare couldn't go against their master.

'Rafiseria.'

Nayatra fell into confusion after hearing her true name. The calmness, that hadn't been lost due to the kidnapping, collapsed completely.

In-gong glanced at Carack, who then let Nayatra go. In-gong grabbed Nayatra's hand and said,

"I'll explain everything later. Just follow me once. I don't mean to do anything to you."

Nayatra's eyes shook, and she bit her lip before nodding.

"I understand. It is an emergency, so I will listen to the story later."

"Yes, thank you."

In-gong sighed with relief, not that it was unlikely that she would vanish.

'There is a high chance that I have the things Nayatra is looking for.'

In fact, he had one more reason to smash the floor and destroy the place where the auction items were stored. He had placed the auction items in his inventory.

In Knight Saga, Vulcanus was like a villainous merchant, so In-gong's conscience wasn't affected.

Moreover, if he left the items there, they would have been lost or destroyed by Paratus.

'It is a good thing. Uhh, yes. That's right.'

In-gong coughed and opened his inventory hurriedly. He didn't know what items he had gotten aside from the Dragon King's Golden Helmet, but now wasn't the time to look through them one by one.

In-gong took out a dwarf axe and shield and threw them to Carack.

Then In-gong looked back at Nayatra. She was amazed by In-gong, who had pulled the axe and shield out of the air. However, Nayatra held a dagger in her hands—she was a skilled thief and assassin.

“Nayatra, follow me. And Carack, I will lead the way. Protect my back.”

“Understood. Be careful, Prince.”

Carack smiled and stepped back. Nayatra’s eyes widened again.

“P-prince?”

The shock in her eyes wasn’t like when females met the idol singers they worshipped but a pleasant surprise in the eyes that were as calm as a lake.

“That reminds me, didn’t Nayatra like fairy tales?”

Moreover, it seemed like her personality was more active than it had been before she became a slave in Knight Saga.

“I will also explain that later.”

In-gong said with a smile before starting to run.

Shutra!

# Chapter 116

## Auction #8

There were still barbarians in the passage leading from the back of the stage to the auction house. They were amazed by the tremendous noise that triggered the collapse, but they seemed to be waiting for Paratus to join them.

‘Well, that doesn’t really matter!’

With White Eagle and Black Eagle surrounding him, In-gong narrowed the distance to the nearest enemy.

He had used True Destruction, but due to regulating his power and Earth Quaker being readjusted, his stamina, aura and mental state weren’t drained like they had been when he fought against the guardian. Currently, half of his aura was left, and his stamina was recovering thanks to a recovery potion.

Most of the barbarian warriors Paratus had brought were elites and had fairly high levels of Body Hardening. So, instead of fighting them, In-gong used Explosive Power and Great Mountain to push them far away.

Arang was good when hitting the body directly, but Arang was clearly a technique of Divine Beast Authority and consumed a lot of aura. In-gong wouldn’t be able to stand up if he continued using Arang.

“Kuooh!”

In-gong used Great Mountain to split the enemies on either side of him and grasped the remaining number of enemies by using the mini-map. After this event, he would think about developing an internal blow technique similar to Arang or try to develop a weaker version of Arang with Caitlin.

‘Master!’

Green Wind called from in front of In-gong. White Eagle and Black Eagle revolved like

a dancing couple in the middle of the passage, striking the chest of a barbarian. It was the last enemy on the mini-map.

“Well done! Green Wind!”

In-gong didn't forget to praise Green Wind who laughed brightly. While In-gong had been striking from the front, Carack hadn't forgotten to push the enemies away with the shield.

“There will be enemies inside the auction house. Don't relax!”

“Understood!”

Carack cried out in response, and Nayatra nodded gently. In-gong couldn't help smiling. It was reassuring that he had Nayatra, one of his three most trusted subordinates in Knight Saga, with him.

‘Vandal.’

In-gong was reminded of Vandal, with whom he had shaken hands. Now that In-gong had secured Nayatra, the next one was Vandal. It wouldn't be long before they could shake hands again.

In-gong recalled White Eagle and Black Eagle, and instead of jumping right into the auction house, he paused for a moment and looked at the mini-map. Fortunately, the situation inside the auction house was better than In-gong had expected.

“Caitlin.”

Caitlin played a big role this time. Unlike previously, she didn't have any blood covering her body because she was fighting barbarians with hard skins. However, she had defeated a significant number of them.

She was bare-handed because it was forbidden to carry weapons inside the auction house, but Carack and Delia were the only ones who required a weapon in the first place. Caitlin and Seira used their fists, while Felicia was a magician, and Karma use her legs and the spirit magic that she was learning. Additionally, there was also the druid, Daphne.

In movies, terrorists would try to hold hostages, but these barbarians didn't even try.

The situation was favourable to In-gong's side.

It was due to the outstanding performance of their big party, but there were other factors that made the situation better. In addition to the fact that the troops who searched for Paratus hadn't returned, most of the people who attended the auction house were prominent figures. Moreover, although the casualties were large at the beginning, most of the damage had been concentrated on the auction house personnel, so the power of the escorts were preserved.

After grasping the situation, In-gong ran towards Caitlin and the party. Instead of opening the road, White Eagle and Black Eagle escorted Carack and Nayatra.

"Shutra!"

Caitlin, who had been busy fighting, was the first to notice In-gong's approach due to the Starlight Core. It was strange to see her smiling so prettily while holding the head of a barbarian warrior.

In-gong laughed and joined Caitlin.

"Shutra! What on earth happened? I heard a huge sound! Are you okay? You aren't hurt anywhere?"

Felicia hurried forward and poured out a barrage of questions. Even while asking questions, Felicia looked In-gong up and down to check if he was wounded.

"I'm fine. There was a fight with Paratus, the younger brother of the barbarian king. That sound was the sound of the floor crumbling. He fell down, but I'm safe."

In-gong answered the questions one by one, but there were still some questions remaining. Felicia made a startled expression.

"The barbarian king's brother? How do you know... no, that doesn't matter. It isn't the important thing right now."

Felicia took a deep breath and muttered 'Because it is Shutra.' before speaking in a louder voice.

“As you can see, the situation is almost calm. However, there is still a disturbance outside.”

There were few people fighting inside the auction house right now. Most of the barbarian warriors fled or were collapsed, while those who were still fighting were being attacked one-sidedly.

“The barbarians are attacking Takar itself?”

Felicia nodded at In-gong’s question.

“That’s right. There must have been some enemies hiding inside the castle. They set fire everywhere to cause a fuss. If the barbarian king’s brother is inside like you said... Was it perhaps for the auction goods?”

It was impossible that the brother of the barbarian king would be under someone’s command. The strongest power had attacked the auction house, so it was right to presume that the auction house was the goal.

“The place where the floor collapsed— is it the temporary storage place for the auction items? Did you take the auction items?”

Felicia asked the question through a magic spell. Her eyes showed that she had already guessed the answer.

“Perhaps. Let’s talk about that later.”

Felicia nodded with a satisfied expression at In-gong’s answer.

“Yes, let’s wait here for a while. Vulcanus knows the importance of the auction house and will send people soon. It would be safer to stay here than to go elsewhere.”

Takar was literally his domain. The situation had already calmed, so there was no need to venture to a place where there was still fighting.

In-gong nodded in agreement. It was a situation where the auction items had already been stolen, and they could act like the ‘royal family’ had repelled the enemies. The main priority was to ensure the safety of the party.



‘Even if Paratus comes back, it is better in here.’

As Felicia said, Vulcanus’ troops would come sooner or later. Moreover, Caitlin was here as well. In-gong might struggle alone against Paratus, but the story was different with the addition of Caitlin. Rather, Paratus should be the one worrying about his life.

After Felicia and In-gong wrapped up their conversation, Delia asked a question,

“9th Prince, who is that person with you?”

She was pointing to Nayatra, who stood between In-gong and Carack. In-gong brought Nayatra forward and said,

“Nayatra. She’ll be coming along with us for a while.”

“A succubus?”

Felicia asked with confusion. Nayatra smiled gently and said,

“It’s a honour to meet you. I am Nayatra.”

While listening to the conversation, she determined that Felicia was a princess. Felicia looked over at Nayatra and introduced herself,

“6th Princess Felicia Doomblade. This is my younger sister, 8th Princess Caitlin Moonlight.”

Nayatra glanced over at Caitlin and bowed politely.

Felicia glanced at In-gong.

“Is this also something to talk about later?”

“Yes, later.”

He had to finish discussing things with Nayatra first. Right now, the situation was difficult, so it was hard to speak.

In-gong replied with an awkward grin, while Felicia laughed and introduced the rest of the companions to Nayatra. They started greeting each other, then Caitlin tugged at In-gong's sleeve.

"Excuse me, Shutra."

"Huh?"

"That... do you have something like a big cloth or cloak?"

"Cloth or cloak? Why?"

Caitlin turned red at In-gong's question. In-gong understood Caitlin's words when he looked at her.

Caitlin's hands were holding down the short, torn hem. She hadn't noticed while fighting, but now she was shy about her clothing after the fight had ended. Instead of embarrassing Caitlin, In-gong handed over a high quality piece of cloth from his inventory. It was something he had found in Thunderdoom Fortress.

"Thank you."

Caitlin hurriedly formed a temporary skirt by tying it around her waist and sighed with relief. Then she thanked In-gong with a bright smile.

'Relax.'

In-gong stroked Caitlin's head unknowingly due to forming the habit with Green Wind. Caitlin laughed and looked at the entrance of the auction house.

Vulcanus' troops were entering the auction house.

The ones who entered the auction house were Vulcanus' elites called the Red Wolves. As the name suggested, all of them wore red suits and explained the situation to the customers of the auction house.

This was a rough summary:

“Some barbarians attacked Takar, but they were almost exterminated. We are extremely sorry that you, our customers have become involved in this. and you will be compensated. There are still barbarians left, so please stay in the auction house for now.”

Most of the deaths were the auction house employees, so there were few fatalities among the customers.

Thanks to the repeated emphasis on compensation and the energy coming from the red wolves, the customers stopped their angry remarks.

It was at that moment that a few of the Red Wolves, who had gone to look behind the stage of the auction house, reported back to the commander with pale faces. They were speaking in whispers, so In-gong couldn't hear it. However, he had a rough idea of the contents of the conversation.

The place where the auction items had been stored was empty. That was the only possible conversation they could be having.

Felicia poked In-gong's side gently, and he restored his expression.

Then after approximately dozens of minutes, someone approached the Red Wolves guarding the entrance. It was the guide soldier who assisted In-gong's party.

Felicia explained quickly to the Red Wolves, and the guide soldier was brought to the party.

The soldier seemed like he had sprinted here as he was gasping roughly for air.

“Your Highness, it is urgent.”

“What is urgent?”

In-gong and Caitlin sensed the atmosphere and approached the guide soldier. The guide soldier hurriedly said,

“The barbarian army has crossed the boundary. The barbarian king is attacking directly!”

Barbarian King Karatus... was crossing the Eastern Limit Line!

Felicia swallowed her saliva. In-gong grabbed the guide soldier's shoulder and asked urgently,

"General Vandal? What happened to the general?"

"H-he led troops to intercept them. Evian is calling for support."

In-gong was reminded of the battle with the barbarians in Knight Saga. He could now understand why Paratus had done such a reckless robbery.

It was a simultaneous attack. Evian and Takar's auction house were both attacked in order to secure the Dragon King's Golden Helmet.

"Shutra."

Felicia looked at In-gong with a desperate face, and In-gong was reminded of the barbarian king as he looked at Felicia.

The barbarian king was even stronger than Zephyr in Year 515. That meant he was stronger than Vandal.

Now wasn't the time to stay in Takar. In-gong looked towards the south-east where Vandal was.

# Chapter 117

## Change

Karatus, the barbarian king, had crossed the border.

In-gong thought back to Paratus. As the barbarian king's younger brother, his value was both small and big. If he was caught as a prisoner, he could be used somehow.

Was Paratus still caught under the pile of rubble? Or had he already moved? It had been close to 20 minutes since he used True Destruction. It wasn't a long time, but it should be enough for Paratus to climb out from that spot.

Paratus was strong. So, In-gong wasn't sure he could win against Paratus in a one on one fight. In a situation where there was no one supporting In-gong from behind, In-gong could lose his life in an instant.

It was a situation where he had to prioritize securing Nayatra, so he avoided the battle. However, what if that was the wrong move? Would it have been better to fight?

"Relax, Shutra."

Felicia said, placing a hand on In-gong's shoulder. In-gong recovered his spirit and looked over at Felicia thankfully.

She just laughed, immediately understanding what In-gong was thinking.

"The situation has changed. Once again, relax. Do you think that General Vandal has already been cornered?"

Her words were right.

At the time of his confrontation with Paratus, he hadn't known the barbarian king was moving. Moreover, the reason he had avoided fighting was because he wasn't certain he would win. If he had known the information, he would've taken risks. However, the previous situation wasn't one where he should've taken the risk of fighting.

The barbarian king had crossed the border, and Vandal had moved to intercept him. It was done. As Felicia had said, Vandal wasn't in danger yet. He needed to calm down.

"If it is General Vandal, he will do well. So, let's wait. This isn't a situation where we should rush. Wait until tomorrow to lead the troops."

This was the right move. The barbarian king hadn't crossed the border with simply a few of his men... He had crossed with an army. In order to fight against the barbarian king, he needed more troops.

"Noona is correct."

Felicia sighed with relief at In-gong's answer and turned her gaze back to the Red Wolves. The Red Wolves weren't moving quickly, so it was likely that Paratus had already escaped.

"Tomorrow morning, the dark elves will arrive. The lycanthropes are also supposed to arrive at noon. Let us depart tomorrow afternoon as scheduled. We will hurry after meeting with the troops. Do you understand?"

In-gong nodded again at Felicia's words. Caitlin also nodded by In-gong's side as though she agreed. In-gong took a deep breath to calm himself and turned his gaze to Nayatra. She was also surprised by the news about the barbarian king, and there was an uneasy look in her eyes.

In-gong needed to get Nayatra first. He needed to finish his business with her.

In-gong looked at the clock on the mini-map... It seemed like it would be a very long night.

By the time In-gong's party returned to their hotel from the auction house, it was already midnight.

Half of the barbarians that attacked Takar had been caught and the rest had escaped.

Vulcanus, who had looked in briefly on the auction house, had been furious. Despite

being in front of customers, he hadn't been able to control his anger and had cursed several times.

Vulcanus was a VIP member of the dark elves, but he wasn't part of the royal family. The reason why he wasn't able to get any reinforcements was precisely because Takar was a self-governing territory. So, instead of revealing their identities, In-gong and Felicia had departed from the auction house with the other guests.

In-gong's hotel was fine except for some minor damage to the exterior walls. Thanks to that, they were able to take a break.

In-gong washed and changed his clothes before calling Carack and Nayatra to his room.

"Wasn't I supposed to tell you the story?"

Nayatra responded to In-gong's words with a slight frown, as though it was slightly unexpected.

"This is faster than I thought."

"There is an urgent matter, so I want to say it."

If possible, he wanted to finish his business with Nayatra today. Nayatra nodded at In-gong's words and sighed like she had been holding her breath. She straightened her posture and asked In-gong,

"Your Highness, how did you know my name?"

It was the biggest reason why she hadn't tried to slip away when they moved from the auction house to the hotel.

However, In-gong couldn't tell her the truth. She wouldn't believe it even if he told her honestly.

In-gong smiled.

"I'm sorry, I can't tell you right now. However, I would like to make a proposal to you, if you would listen?"

“What is it?”

Nayatra asked with a slightly wary look. In-gong shrugged slightly.

“I want to hire Nayatra as my subordinate. Of course, you don’t have to worry about how you will be treated. I will treat you well as a prince’s escort knight.”

Nayatra’s eyes narrowed. Instead of trying to read Nayatra’s mind, In-gong immediately added something else,

“I will give this as a down payment.”

In-gong pulled out a small white jewel box with red gems embedded in it from his inventory. It was just for a moment, but Nayatra’s eyes shook.

“Didn’t you show up at the auction house because you wanted this?”

Nayatra could no longer hide her agitation, and In-gong sighed with relief.

‘This is right.’

He had seen it when he looked through the auction items. It was because this jewel box was an item that Nayatra always carried in Knight Saga. He had brought it along with Nayatra at the auction house and would be able to raise his favorability with her by giving it to her.

The relationship between Nayatra and the jewel box hadn’t been revealed in Knight Saga, but it was clear that Nayatra treasured it very much.

In-gong smiled at her, and Nayatra’s shoulders shook as she nodded. She responded with some resignation,

“That’s right, this is the only keepsake of my dead older sister. It had been taken from me forcibly during my childhood... It took me 10 years to find out where it was.”

It was such a sad tone that In-gong’s heart tightened just by hearing it. Carack, standing by the door, made a pitiful expression like he wanted to cry.



However, In-gong was different. He was ridiculously impressed.

‘Indeed, Nayatra.’

Her acting ability was truly abnormal. If In-gong hadn’t known the truth, he would have believed her completely.

“But Nayatra, you don’t have a dead sister, do you?”

Nayatra was an only child. It was a story he had heard many times in Knight Saga. After hearing In-gong’s words, Carack’s eyes widened with disbelief while Nayatra swallowed her saliva. She spoke with a pale face,

“I am a little scared now. Your Highness, how do you know so much about me?”

The person in front of Nayatra knew her name as well as her sibling relationship. Additionally, why had he been looking for her?

Had he been watching her for a long time?

As she thought about it some more, Nayatra got goosebumps. She was disturbed by the idea that she hadn’t known someone had been watching her.

Nayatra had the nickname of ‘ice’, so it was rare for her to show emotion. In-gong felt a little embarrassed after seeing her pale face.

He said with an awkward smile,

“I’m sorry, I can’t tell you that now either. But if you accept my proposal, I will let you know in the future.”

It was a slight threat. It wasn’t easy to share inner workings with someone who had such professions. Furthermore, In-gong was a prince of the Demon King’s Palace. Even though it was a plain proposal, it was hard to refuse.

‘A complete villain.’

However, he couldn’t do anything else. There was a lack of time, and there was no way to explain convincingly as to how he knew the truth. His task was to secure her as a

subordinate.

Nayatra shrugged and hesitated to answer. Then Carack added,

“It is better to agree.”

It was advice based on what he had been through. However, it was seen as a threat.

Nayatra, who was careful around Carack ever since the neck hitting incident, made a disgusted expression and bit her lip. She looked straight at In-gong with a determined expression and said,

“Okay, I’ll be Your Highness’ escort knight. But Your Highness, can you really make an unknown person like me your escort knight?”

In-gong nodded and responded,

“I know about Nayatra.”

It was the truth.

Nayatra didn’t know how to respond to In-gong’s words. Her confusion was quite cute.

In-gong added something else,

“Isn’t collecting information Nayatra’s specialty? Although you will be my escort knight, your job will be more on the side of information gathering. It is the right place for you.”

Nayatra was no longer surprised. She shrugged and spoke in a voice filled with resignation,

“I understand. I didn’t expect this to happen at the night market, but it can’t be helped. I will join Your Highness.”

In-gong jerked at the words ‘night market’, but it was only for a moment. He turned a bit red and rose from his seat.

“Good, then I will appoint you as my knight. Kneel down.”

Nayatra frowned at In-gong's words and asked carefully,

"Is it a magic spell?"

She was worried about it being similar to a slave contract. In-gong answered with a calm face,

"I am a prince of the Demon King's Castle. It can't just be through words. Carack went through the same process, so don't worry so much. Nayatra, I won't harm you."

He smiled at the end, but Nayatra's expression didn't brighten. In-gong would have made a similar look if he were in the same situation as Nayatra.

"I would like to believe Your Highness."

It seemed like she was half asking a question. In-gong replied in a serious tone,

"Please trust me. I won't harm you."

Nayatra smiled and then wiped all expression from her face. She went down on one knee in front of In-gong and bowed her head. In-gong pulled a dwarf sword from his inventory and moved it over both of her shoulders. He invoked The King's Knights like he had done with Carack and Karma.

"Nayatra, I appoint you as my knight."

It was a declaration that contained magic. The white power of Conquest rose and enveloped Nayatra.

"Ohh."

Carack exclaimed unknowingly with admiration. Covered in a white light, Nayatra closed her eyes and In-gong did as well. In the darkness, In-gong was facing a woman with white hair and red and blue eyes.

'Punishment, obedience, governance.'

The white woman said with a gentle smile. Her eyes were warm as she looked at In-

gong. In-gong nodded. There were many things he wanted to talk about with the white woman, but he instinctively knew that it wasn't the time.

In-gong opened his eyes and saw Nayatra shaking in fear and ecstasy. He injected the power of Conquest through the sword above her shoulder.

Nayatra flinched but didn't resist. She accepted In-gong's Conquest. She became a new King's Knight.

That wasn't all. The present ceremony held more meaning than that.

[The level of Conquest has risen.]

[The level of The King's Knights has risen.]

[The maximum number of people in the The King's Knights has increased from three to five.]

[The level of Conquest Knight has risen.]

[The King's Knights: Conquest Coat of Arms Lv1 has been acquired.]

Letters made of white light rose in succession.

Naturally, In-gong triggered Conquest Coat of Arms. At that moment, a white coat of arms formed on Carack and Nayatra's forehead. The same thing was probably happening to Karma, who was standing outside the room.

Nayatra opened her eyes slowly. Rather than with fear, she was looking up at In-gong with eyes full of envy and wonder.

In-gong put away the sword and reached out a hand to Nayatra.

Nayatra didn't reject this time. She accepted In-gong's hand with a small smile.

Zephyr raised his head, and he looked toward the southeast for some reason.

He felt a strange feeling of loss.

“Why?”

He asked but didn't receive an answer.

Conquest, War, Death and Famine...

Zephyr shook his head. Then he turned his red gaze away from the southeast and back to the north.

The demon king watched the night sky.

However, he wasn't looking at the dark blue sky or the myriad of stars.

It was at this moment that...

The demon king knew. His intuition was good.

Fate had changed. There was a change in the flow. If fate was a flowing river, there was only a small change in the current. Even so, it was a clear change. The demon king didn't miss this fact.

He wondered what the cause was. How could fate be twisted?

The demon king gazed at the night sky. He remembered the face of Semita Ignus, the 5th Queen who was no longer in this world.

# Chapter 118

## Blitz

The coat of arms on Nayatra and Carack's forehead, which were made of light, were gorgeous and beautiful.

The King's Knights—the symbol indicated that they were apostles of Conquest. Conquest's Coat of Arms meant that Nayatra and Carack, as well as Karma outside the room, were under In-gong's control.

'There is an effect.'

The coat of arms wasn't simply to declare affiliation. The coat of arms itself had power.

First of all, it strengthened their abilities.

When he used Conquest Coat of Arms, all the stats of the King's Knights increased by 20%. Additionally, the effect of Below the King's Flag was greater. Both of these effects had a synergistic effect.

Next was the strengthening of solidarity. In-gong could see the awareness in Nayatra's eyes, and he felt a bit of goodwill. In-gong then shifted his gaze toward Carack, who looked at the white light surrounding his body and smiled.

"I can feel my loyalty to Prince rising."

They weren't simply words; it truly was the case.

In-gong nodded slowly and looked at Nayatra again. Unlike Carack who was accustomed to the power of Conquest due to Below the King's Flag, this was the first time she had experienced the strangeness of Conquest.

'I guess I won't have to worry about her running away?'

He had been worried because this was a contract half-accepted through intimidation.

The reason why he had her join the King's Knights was so that he could use Call whenever she tried to escape. However, looking at Nayatra's eyes right now, it seemed like there would be no need to use Call.

The third effect of Conquest Coat of Arms was strengthening his governance. Before, In-gong had only known Carack's level but not his detailed stats, but that was different now. In-gong was able to see Carack's stats as well as his own.

'His persistence is no joke.'

His persistence and durability were overwhelmingly high compared to his other stats. After being strengthened by Conquest Coat of Arms, they were only slightly lower than In-gong's stats.

'Carack has also gained many levels.'

In-gong remembered that he had been around level 23 or 24 during the Red Lightning subjugation, but he was now level 28.

'His intelligence is too high.'

Carack's intelligence was higher than an orc he had encountered in Knight Saga. However, intelligence wasn't a quantification of mechanical areas such as how fast the brain thought or memory. It was different from wisdom or smarts.

'Maybe they are high as well.'

However, they were invisible stats.

In-gong carried on by looking at Nayatra's stats. Her level, occupations and status were listed on the coat of arms. In Knight Saga, thief and assassin had been her secondary occupations, but they were her main ones now. Rather, her secondary occupation was an escort knight.

'She also has high and low stats.'

Whether she had experienced slavery or not seemed to have created a slight difference in her stats. However, her level was lower than it had been in Knight Saga. It was inevitable since this was one year before then.

“How does it feel?”

As soon as In-gong asked, Nayatra spoke with shining eyes.

“Very good. I feel lighter.”

It wasn't just her eyes, but her voice contained a tinge of ecstasy as well. She was in an excited state, but she meant her words.

In-gong laughed and released Nayatra's hand. Nayatra let out a long exhale like she was enjoying it. Conquest's Coat of Arms and the white light had disappeared, but her cheeks were still red.

“Master.”

In-gong heard Green Wind's voice suddenly in his ears. She took her solid form and clung to In-gong's arm while looking back and forth between Carack and Nayatra.

“Master, I want to be Master's knight as well.”

“Huh?”

“I am already Master's, but Carack and the succubus who suddenly appeared are different. I want to be the same.”

In-gong blinked at the unexpected request. There was a strange feeling of jealousy on Green Wind's face.

‘Do I need it?’

In-gong always had Green Wind with him, unlike Carack, Karma and Nayatra. There was no need to use Call, and as Green Wind said, she was already conquered. So, he couldn't think of her as a knight.

The number of people he could accept into the King's Knights was limited. This time the level of the King's Knights rose, so the number was slightly increased, but it was only be two places.



‘I will give one of them to Vandal, and I have one spare spot left.’

He thought it was a bit of a waste to give one of those spots to Green Wind. The situation was somewhat different from when he accepted Karma; at the time, other than Carack, he’d had no subordinate.

As if she noticed In-gong’s thoughts, Green Wind pulled his arm more firmly and gazed at him earnestly. She almost seemed like a child. In-gong couldn’t ignore that gaze, so he thought about the benefits of having Green Wind as a knight.

‘Will the Call effect apply to White Eagle?’

White Eagle came flying when called, but there was a difference between flying and appearing instantly. It was limited to once a day, but it wasn’t useless.

‘And the strengthening effect... isn’t it more effective than I thought?’

Green Wind’s power had dropped significantly after leaving Enger Plains. Thanks to this, she couldn’t utilize the various buffs that had been used at Enger Plains.

Maybe Conquest Coat of Arms wouldn’t just affect the numerical stats but the capabilities of the target as well. It was quite possible that he could restore Green Wind’s power.

“Master?”

Green Wind asked again, and In-gong laughed.

“Yes, Green Wind is always with me.”

The limit of the King’s Knights would increase again when the level rose. The utility was sufficient, and he didn’t want to disappoint Green Wind, who was satisfied with the smallest of praises.

Green Wind laughed brightly as she received In-gong’s permission and knelt down. In-gong was reminded of his first meeting with Green Wind at Enger Plains.

He accepted Green Wind as his knight in the same method as he had done with Nayatra.

“Ahh.”

Green Wind opened her eyes slowly and breathed out. The Conquest Coat of Arms formed on her forehead as well.

‘Her power has recovered.’

From the beginning, she had been a higher-order guardian. Carack was surprised when he saw Green Wind, while In-gong felt the sacredness and mystique he had felt when he saw her for the first time.

“Thank you, Master. You are a great master.”

Green Wind embraced In-gong tightly before turning around and spreading her arms.

“Okay, with this, there is nothing that I’m not part of.”

Nayatra’s eyes narrowed at the sudden declaration, and she asked In-gong,

“Hrmm, Master, who is she?”

It was clearly a soft and gentle voice, but strangely, it didn’t sound like it. In-gong answered hurriedly,

“She is Green Wind, the guardian of Enger Plains. Now, she is my guardian.”

Green Wind’s eyes sparkled at ‘my guardian’.

“Yes, I am Master’s. My history and traditions are different from you who came suddenly.”

“Haven’t you only been here a couple of months. So, what history?”

Green Wind growled at Carack’s sharp point, and Carack quickly turned his gaze elsewhere.

Nayatra nodded silently.

“Then we are almost like siblings. Please look after me in the future.”

Her smiling face was very beautiful, but In-gong felt scared for some reason. Green Wind faced Nayatra with wide eyes and grasped her hand. One side was laughing while the other was alert, but the atmosphere seemed to be the same. They were both wary of each other.

In-gong felt something in his chest warm at the confrontation between the two of them.

‘W-what? This strange sense of fulfillment...’

It was a type of happiness that he hadn’t experienced before. He didn’t know why Green Wind and Nayatra felt opposed to each other, but it was still a good thing.

However, In-gong soon regained his spirit. After he stopped the confrontation by releasing Green Wind’s solid state, he ordered Carack and Nayatra to go rest. It wasn’t a situation in which they could afford to keep talking and laughing. Starting tomorrow, he would have to keep working hard.

Nayatra left respectfully, while Carack left after expressing his concerns.

Although there was still Green Wind, In-gong appeared alone on the surface, so he sat down.

‘Nayatra has joined me.’

One of his three most beloved subordinates in Knight Saga...

She had been the one who provided the information which led to the lycanthrope subjugation.

He felt like he had taken one step further to his goal; there was a strong sense of accomplishment.

‘Vandal.’

The handshake In-gong shared with him came to mind, and a smile formed on his face.

‘The barbarian king is strong. I need to be vigilant. I need to win the fight with Vandal as well.’

In-gong took a deep, determined breath and cleared his head. He was going to practice his aura like usual before going to sleep.

However, he then heard a knock at the door.

“Shutra, can I enter?”

It was Felicia’s voice. In-gong opened the door to see her wearing a creamy night gown. It seemed like she had finished her preparations for sleep.

“Is the talk finished?”

Felicia asked as she closed the door. In-gong responded with a relaxed expression,

“Yes, Nayatra will be accompanying us in the future. She will be in charge of gathering information.”

It was essential to have someone in charge of gathering information. Carack was a competent aide, but he didn’t have the ability to gather information like Seira or Delia. Nayatra was a specialist in gathering information, so she would reinforce what Carack lacked.

At the end of In-gong’s words, Felicia sat down on the bed facing In-gong.

“Hmm, I am curious if you got her to join because she is a succubus, but... I believe in Shutra.”

It meant that she wouldn’t ask anything. In-gong had no way of explaining it, so he accepted Felicia’s courtesy.

“Thank you.”

“Well, there is no need for thanks.”

Felicia laughed and crossed her legs.

“Shutra, do you know why I came?”

He could guess. Therefore, In-gong asked something else before starting.

“Caitlin noona?”

“She is already sleeping. Today was fairly tough on her.”

She had gone shopping around Takar during the day and fought at the auction house at night.

“Now, tell me the story.”

Felicia prompted as she crossed her legs the other way. In-gong took a minute to think about where to start the story, then he made his decision. He pulled the Dragon King’s Golden Helmet from his inventory.

“This object is called the Dragon King’s Golden Helmet. Paratus, the younger brother of the barbarian king, attacked the auction house because of this.”

In-gong handed over the golden helmet. Felicia turned the helmet to the dragon face and asked,

“The Dragon King’s helmet?”

“The legendary barbarian king wore it. He was worshipped as a god.”

“Ohh.”

As a specialist in ruins exploration, Felicia was deeply interested in relics. Her eyes were filled with delight as she looked at the helmet.

In-gong continued speaking,

“The significance of the Dragon King’s helmet is unusual for the barbarians. It is something similar to a crown or a seal. This is an item that certifies the king’s authority.”

“Was this part of the items at Takar’s auction house?”

“I don’t know the reason either, but the ones who attacked the auction were after it.”

It could have been stolen or found during a war, but he didn’t know the details.

Felicia touched the surface of the golden helmet slowly. There was a different light in her eyes. It wasn’t the gaze of a scholar excited about exploring ruins but the gaze of a princess of the Demon King’s Palace.

“Indeed, it can come in handy in some ways.”

Although it was a symbol of kingship, it was impossible for them to rule over the barbarians simply by using the Dragon King’s Golden Helmet. If a dark elf tried to become the ruler of the lycanthropes, no lycanthropes would listen to them. The barbarians were the same. It was impossible to gain authority over the barbarians simply by using the Dragon King’s Golden Helmet.

However, there were still many things it could be used for. They could break the morale of the barbarians or cause internal fighting.

Felicia didn’t need to list such examples to In-gong. So, she shrugged and asked another question,

“Did you say Paratus? Anyway, he knows that you have this?”

“Yes, although he doesn’t know who I am.”

Moreover, right now, Paratus was busy running away. In-gong didn’t know about the battlefield with the barbarians, but it was unlikely that he would face Paratus for a while.

At any rate, it was obvious that he had been obsessed with the golden helmet when he faced In-gong.

“As always, you bring a storm with you. Can’t you think about the people who will get involved?”

Felicia frowned as she asked with crossed arms. In-gong had only one possible reply to Felicia,

“Sorry.”

He truly did feel sorry toward Felicia as she always had to deal with it.

As a gloomy expression formed on In-gong’s face, Felicia stood up with an embarrassed expression.

“It’s a joke, a joke. And it is good that we got caught up with this. You don’t have to worry about it.”

Felicia winked and quickly changed the topic.

“Anyway, Paratus was only aiming for this helmet?”

“For now.”

“Hmm, then the rest of the items?”

Felicia placed her hands on her waist and tilted her head. In-gong laughed awkwardly and said,

“That, well... wouldn’t they have been destroyed by the crash if I hadn’t taken them?”

It was a valid reason, but Felicia clicked her tongue as she gazed at In-gong.

“You really speak well.”

It was obvious that he would have taken them anyway.

However, Felicia just shrugged and said to In-gong,

“Well, it was an unavoidable situation. Vulcanus is also a bad person, but we are royalty. Shouldn’t we refrain from stealing?”

“I will keep it in mind.”

“Yes, please do so, Shutra.”

Felicia patted In-gong's head softly. It had always been In-gong stroking someone's head, so he felt quite strange.

"Anyway."

"Anyway?"

"So, what did you get? Anything good? My favourite jewellery or paintings?"

Felicia asked with a smile, and In-gong couldn't help smiling back. Instead of explaining, he took out the auction items from his inventory, one by one.

"Eeeeh! First, the Demon King's Palace, and now you want to drag me to a battlefield!"

"Yes."



# Chapter 119

## Blitz #2

The next morning, In-gong gathered the group together and talked about their future schedule.

The simple plan was to join with the reinforcements, move to Evian and join General Vandal in fighting against the barbarian king.

They had guessed this roughly last night, so only two people reacted to it. One was Nayatra, who hadn't been in In-gong's party until yesterday, and the other was Amita.

"Eeeeh! First, the Demon King's Palace, and now you want to drag me to a battlefield!"

"Yes."

Amita paused at In-gong's cool reply, then they started to hit the ground with their tail.

"Ohh! Ohh! Ohh!"

If they were a person, they probably would have grabbed In-gong's collar. Daphne hugged Amita from behind.

"Amita, if we go to the battlefield, we need your power. Moreover, you'd be willing to send me to a terrible battlefield alone?"

"Oh..."

Amita's tail and shoulders slumped at the same time. Daphne continued talking as Amita's ears drooped.

"Before leaving today, I will buy more of Amita's favourite sweets. When we return, I will buy you more. Then won't you have enough sweets for a while?"

Amita was happy at the thought of more sweets.

They eventually let out a long sigh. Amita jumped out of Daphne's arms and said,

"It can't be helped. I will go for Daphne's sake."

"Thank you, Amita."

Daphne smiled at Amita, then she winked slightly at In-gong. In-gong nodded as he watched Amita's tail.

'It is good that I left it to Daphne.'

They were heading to the battlefield, so Amita's skills were needed more than usual. The distribution of equipment was important, but the maintenance was also important.

Amita waved their tail in resistance whenever asked to do anything, but they always gave in at the end.

'Master, the talking raccoon has become happy again.'

'Yes.'

In-gong responded to Green Wind's whisper, then he looked at Nayatra. She looked somewhat anxious about being dragged to the battlefield.

"Nayatra, are you okay?"

Nayatra flinched at In-gong's question, then she responded with a firm expression.

"I am one of Prince's subordinates. I'm okay."

In fact, she stated that she was okay when asked, but her reaction was completely different.

Although Below the King's Flag and Conquest Coat of arms had the effect of increasing loyalty to In-gong, it didn't completely remodel her mind. It was sort of like boosting the effect?

Despite Conquest Coat of Arms, Nayatra still felt some skepticism towards In-gong.

‘And she has started calling me Prince instead of Your Highness.’

This was the first time that Nayatra had called him Prince. Maybe it was a type of goodwill toward In-gong.

After smiling at Nayatra, In-gong looked in Felicia’s direction. Felicia clapped lightly and got everyone’s attention.

“Okay, now that it has been decided, shall we move? We will move out of Takar with the supplies purchased yesterday and will join the reinforcements at the meeting place. We will head to Evian this afternoon.”

While In-gong was searching for Nayatra in the slave stores, Felicia had bought supplies. In this regard, Felicia was indeed reliable.

After having breakfast at the hotel, they heading to the stores. A few stores had closed after last night, but most of them were operating normally.

“They need to show that they are still steady.” The gate inspection will be stricter than usual, but otherwise, it should go smoothly.”

It was like Felicia said. Even though they were scrutinized more closely than possible in case barbarians were hiding in the food wagons, passing through the gates itself was no problem.

They moved to the transportation formation near Takar. Originally, the reinforcements had planned to join them at Takar, but they didn’t want to trouble Takar, while they were still sensitive to the barbarians’ attacks.

The transportation formation was spread like a spider web around various places in the Demon World. Therefore, not all the formations were connected together. Of course, technically, it wasn’t impossible to connect all the formations, but the Demon King’s Palace didn’t want that. There were security, political and cost issues.

The issue of security was about a possible attack towards the Demon King’s Palace through the transport formations, while the political issue was about the reluctance

of certain species. It wasn't pleasant to have the forces of the Demon King's Palace capable of entering through the transport formations at any time, even if they didn't intend to rebel. Therefore, the formations directly linked to the Demon King's Palace were only placed in palaces or cities with a strong loyalty to the demon king.

'Basically, all the species that have queens.'

During the Lycanthrope subjugation, the first thing Chris had done was destroy all the transportation formations linked to the Demon King's Palace.

'The transportation network was severely damaged before and after the Day of Massacre.'

The queens of various species destroyed all their transportation formations.

In-gong was reminded of things he had experienced in Knight Saga. It was a future that In-gong would surely stop. This was a no-brainer.

They arrived at the transportation formation and waited for a while until the dark elves arrived. There were 200 people riding dracos, with a mix of warriors, magicians and priests.

"It is great to see 6th Princess."

The one who led the dark elves was Alita Doomblade, the youngest of Felicia's aunts. She had a mix of silver and purple hair and was an excellent hunter.

"It is great to see you, Aunt Alita."

Felicia welcomed Alita with a hug and introduced In-gong and the others. Like Felicia, Alita was dressed in revealing clothes and laughed playfully.

"You are the 9th Prince of the rumours. It is an honour."

What was this 9th Prince of rumours?

In-gong greeted Alita with a smile. Alita seemed like a rougher, more mature version of Felicia.

‘Knight Saga... She was the last escort protecting Felicia.’

Then the expression on Alita’s face changed. She saw the cute-looking Amita waving their tail and went over to pat them.

In-gong looked at the troops and materials Alita had brought. There had to be enough supplies to eat and drink for 200 people, so the amount was quite considerable.

At noon, the reinforcements from the lycanthropes arrived. There were 200 of them, exactly like the dark elves, and they were wearing partial armour made of leather.

“It is great to see 8th Princess.”

The lycanthrope reinforcements were led by Kaparang, who was considered a rising star in the Blood Companions. Although the royal blood that flowed through him was a bit distant, Caitlin still regarded him as a cousin.

“I’ve heard a lot of rumours about you. It is a tremendous honour to be able to fight with such a great person.”

“That’s right, Shutra is amazing.”

Caitlin laughed while In-gong shook Kaparang’s hand. Kaparang was much bigger and more muscular than Chris, but his smile was just like Caitlin’s.

‘I wonder what the rumours are.’

In-gong recalled everything he knew about Kaparang as they shook hands. He couldn’t remember every member of the Blood Companions. Unlike the dark elves, who could be both peaceful and fierce in combat, it was natural that almost all lycanthropes were warriors.

Therefore, the lycanthrope reinforcements were all warriors. It wasn’t that they couldn’t just magic or divine power, but they needed to be capable of bare-handed combat to be classified as lycanthrope warriors.

The lycanthropes had separate supplies that were three times larger than the dark elves’. It was basically the difference between the dark elves and the lycanthropes who were born with a big appetite.

The number of reinforcements equalled to 400. They were elites, so their battle power surpassed 1,000 ordinary soldiers from the Demon King's Palace.

While In-gong and Caitlin were talking with Alita and Kaparang, Felicia gathered the supplies and set up a plan for moving. Once out of the influence of Takar, they would have to deal with the problem of transporting supplies in the lawless Evian area.

Some time passed. They were just about to head off with the reinforcements.

"Royal Princess!"

The official in charge of the transportation formation came rushing towards In-gong's group. He stopped in front of Felicia and screamed as he drew out several bundles of paper.

"An urgent message from Evian!"

"General Vandal?"

In-gong asked reflexively, and the official shook his head. He held out the bundles of paper and exclaimed,

"It isn't General Vandal! Urgent messages from different bases came pouring in simultaneously!"

In-gong could tell that it wasn't a normal situation just by the official's white face. Kaparang asked the official,

"What is going on? Wasn't General Vandal going to intercept the army?"

The barbarian king had led an army beyond the limit line, and General Vandal had led his army to intercept the barbarian king. It was General Vandal, so it shouldn't be a situation where the other bases of Evian should be attacked.

"The barbarian king's army turned out to be greater than expected."

Alita took the papers from the official and spread them on a desk. There was a difference in the times that the messages were sent, but every place had an emergency.

Alita's face became pale as she read the number of enemies reported at each base.

"It seems like he is trying to occupy the bases while Vandal's army is tied up. Then General Vandal will end up being isolated."

As soon as Alita spoke, Carack quickly unfolded a map of Evian and marked the location of the bases as well as General Vandal's presumed location. As Alita said, if the bases were captured, it would cause serious problems by isolating Vandal's army from the supply lines, making them unable to fight properly.

It was a strategy that wouldn't be possible unless there was confidence in the number of troops. In other words, it was possible to defeat the army by breaking down the troops.

Felicia bit her lip and asked,

"Where is the closest place that reported an emergency?"

"It is the seventh base, but it is four days away from here. Even if we rush, we will only be able to make it in two days."

Delia replied with a dark expression. The unit, which consisted of 400 elites, had high combat power and maneuverability, but there was still a limit.

At their fastest speed, it would take two days. That was too late. The seventh base would've fallen by then. An exhausted unit would be facing the enemy who had occupied the base.

Objectively, they should give up on the seventh base. It would be better to ask for additional reinforcements from the Demon King's Palace and hope that General Vandal could hold on as long as possible.

Felicia closed her eyes tightly. Then In-gong said,

"We will get there in time."

"Shutra?"

In-gong had manipulated his mini-map while looking at Carack's map. He recalled the battle against the barbarians in Knight Saga and inferred the situation between General Vandal and the barbarians.

He had to cut off the barbarian's offensive. In order to do that, he had to protect the seventh base. The problem was how to get there in time.

Everyone's eyes were focused on In-gong as he looked up. He asked Felicia,

"Felicia noona, can you block anyone from seeing around the supplies?"

"Your Highness?"

Kaparang asked with confusion, but there was no time to reply. Felicia just thought about what In-gong needed instead of demanding the reason.

"I understand, I'll do so. Daphne, can you help me?"

"I understand."

Felicia and Daphne headed to the place where the supplies were located. Although Alita and Kaparang tried to follow, In-gong left them with Carack and headed to the supplies place with Caitlin. It wasn't easy to make the mountain of supplies invisible, but Felicia easily solved In-gong's demand. Felicia summoned the spirits of light and water at the same time, with Daphne assisting her. The spirits created mirrors that reflected the light that hit it and obscured the supplies.

Then it was In-gong's turn. He placed the supplies for 400 people into his inventory. There was a limit to how much he could put in at once, so he had to utilize his inventory ability more than a dozen times.

Even Felicia and Caitlin, who already knew about In-gong's inventory ability, were astonished. What type of powerful magic was it that it could store all these supplies at once?

Felicia tried to suppress her soaring academic desire to know, while Caitlin blinked. She was so surprised that she couldn't even say her usual phrase.

By taking all the supplies, In-gong lightened the burden on the reinforcements and



moved to the next step. Although everyone was perplexed by the supplies suddenly disappearing, In-gong issued a simple order.

The dark elves boarded the dracos, and the the lycanthropes used their beast forms.

At this point, both Kaparang and Alita realized In-gong's idea. They didn't know how he had taken care of the supplies, but it was still irrational. It was impossible to get there in time, and they would just exhaust their stamina while moving. What good was arriving at the battlefield if they couldn't fight?

However, Felicia believed in In-gong. Kaparang and Alita were restrained, and everyone was forced to follow In-gong's order.

Caitlin was no different. She ordered the lycanthropes to change to their beast and climbed onto her black horse.

In-gong asked Felicia,

"Remember Thunderdoom Fortress?"

"I remember. I can't forget it."

Felicia laughed while there were tears in her eyes, and Daphne and Delia had similar expressions. Carack just smiled and looked straight ahead.

"This time, you won't be behind me?"

"Follow closely."

In-gong smiled from aboard Maybach. He took a deep breath and activated Conquest.

The barbarians used unexpected behaviour to cause a crisis, so his actions should be unexpected as well.

"Master, I will help you."

Green Wind appeared in a semi-solid state and flew high into the sky. The coat of arms surfaced on her forehead.

The guardian of Enger Plains...

Green Wind had a sacred light around her, and she embraced all 400 reinforcements with the light.

‘Protection of the Wind.’

It was the buff that sped up In-gong’s movements on Enger Plains.

All the reinforcements were given Protection of the Wind, and a green wind circled around their legs. Despite the Conquest Coat of Arms restoring her strength, it was still hard to bless everyone. Even so, Green Wind did it with a smile because she didn’t want to disappoint In-gong.

The green wind blew above In-gong’s head, and he grabbed at the air. It wasn’t just the power of the King’s Knights that had grown, but Conquest as well. The power of Conquest was far stronger than when In-gong first received it.

“Below the King’s Flag.”

A white light emerged from In-gong’s hand. It formed a flagpole with a white flag fluttering in the wind.

The king’s flag made of light...

In-gong wielded it like a huge spear. Then the white light of Conquest wrapped around the reinforcements.

The power of Conquest was added to Protection of the Wind.

It wasn’t just Kaparang and Alita. The 400 reinforcements all stared at In-gong.

“Go, Master. Faster than the wind.”

Green Wind said. Carack smiled wildly and shouted,

“Karah!”

No more dialogue was necessary. In-gong raised the king’s flag and set out at the

vanguard. They started to run faster than the wind.

# Chapter 120

## Blitz #3

Evian was a land of little interest to the Demon King's Palace. Despite the military value of protecting the limit line, the land was worthless. In spite of this, a considerable amount of military forces had to be stationed here.

There were several bases in Evian, and each base had thousands of soldiers for the purpose of defense.

The seventh base, which could be called Takar's last base, served as the emergency dispatch role due to its proximity to Takar, a trade city. Eventually, it was a base that played the role of the supplies distribution point, rather than defense. Therefore, the seventh base was the most non-military base among all of Evian's bases. Apart from the barbarians beyond the limit line, there were also outlaws around Evian.

However, that was now in the past.

The defenders of the seventh base looked east with horrible expressions. A barbarian army was visible beyond the not-so-high walls. At a rough estimate, their numbers went beyond 1,500 enemies.

On the other hand, there were approximately only 400 troops stationed at the seventh base.

Even if they had the defensive advantage of the walls, the attacking side had more than triple the number of defenders. Considering the low walls of the seventh base, it would be a dire circumstance even if the number of troops was doubled.

The lizardman, Caligula, leader of the seventh base, recalled his hometown in the swamps. He remembered the faces of his family members who had told him he would succeed when he left home.

Two days ago, he had been informed that the barbarians had struck the fifth and sixth bases. He hadn't thought the enemy would appear so quickly. The fifth and sixth bases

were in front of the seventh base. The two bases hadn't collapsed yet, so he hadn't thought that the seventh base would be attacked.

However, the barbarians had come up with the unexpected tactic of striking the bases simultaneously.

It was the result of the barbarians' maneuverability and the strange tactic of attacking some bases while ignoring others.

Thanks to this, the barbarian army continued on while split up. However, their numbers had probably been huge in the beginning.

Caligula closed his eyes. He wouldn't surrender even when the opponents were the savage barbarians. If he wanted to run away, then he would've done so already. Now, he would fight to the death.

The defenders of the base looked at Caligula with uneasy expressions. Instead of squatting behind the wall, Caligula picked up a big knife he had brought with him from the swamps.

"Let's fight to the death. We have to earn the wages that we were paid."

Some laughed, some faces became darker, while others glared down at the enemy with fierce expressions. Barak the orc, the second highest ranking soldier after Caligula, responded with the same smile.

"How much do you get paid?"

"It is still more than you."

Caligula responded before taking a deep breath as he looked ahead of him. The barbarians were all using Body Hardening.

Caligula no longer had any regrets. He raised his sword high along with Barak.

The barbarians rushed forward.

The battle began.

“It is starting.”

In-gong said while sharing Green Wind’s gaze from the sky.

400 troops were gathered behind a hill not far from the seventh base and restoring their breathing.

“This is good.”

Carack spoke from In-gong’s other side. They arrived around 30 minutes before the battle and had mostly recovered, so the timing was just right.

In-gong and the 400 troops hadn’t run all night. There was no point arriving at the base if their stamina was empty.

In-gong had maximized the speed by looking at the mini-map to navigate. They had stopped briefly to eat or sleep. Of course, it hadn’t been a proper meal and sleep, so everyone was exhausted by the time they arrived at the bottom of the hill. Their fatigue couldn’t be eliminated after only 30 minutes of rest.

However, it was possible with magic. The 400 troops were able to survive the high speed rush due to the magic. So, everyone was in good shape.

On the other hand, Daphne and Felicia were on the verge of fainting in the middle of the 400 troops. It was because both of them had poured out various recovery magic.

“Shutra... too... much.”

Felicia imitated Caitlin with a dying expression. Of course, she wasn’t really resentful. In-gong hadn’t forced Felicia to keep using recovery magic. Felicia had done it because of her duty as a princess. The present joke was just to reassure the others.

Apart from Amita, who was waving their tail from Daphne’s arms, and some warriors who were left behind to care for Felicia and Daphne, all of the other troops were ready to run again.

The seventh base was still quite a distance away. However, the barbarians would never

have thought that troops would have arrived during the night.

“We are going.”

In-gong told Felicia, who responded by raising a limp arm.

In-gong stopped sharing his gaze with Green Wind, then he grabbed Maybach’s reins and used Conquest Coat of Arms once again. He looked before him and shouted,

“Let’s go! Faster than the wind!”

“Faster than the wind!”

“Faster than the wind!”

400 troops shouted. Once again, they ran behind In-gong under the King’s Flag.

It was a white line drawn on a map.

Caligula pounded on the chest of a barbarian soldier who was stepping on the shoulders of his fellow soldier in order to climb the wall. It was already impossible to give any proper commands.

The arrows, stones and oil pouring onto the soldiers rushing toward the wall seemed to finish in the blink of an eye. It was best to fight using the height difference of the walls.

Their swords didn’t work well against the barbarians who had their bodies hardened. Caligula could barely break the shells, so it was obvious that the swords of general soldiers would just bounce back.

Fortunately, there was only a small number of barbarians who had learned Body Hardening to that level. If there were more of them, the base would have fallen in an instant.

Caligula gasped and lifted his sword again. Beside Caligula, Barak gave a loud cry. There were no proper words, but Caligula understood his meaning.

‘Look that way.’

Caligula turned his head and saw a white light. It was moving quickly and towards the barbarians over here. It was like a white line drawn on a map.

Caligula couldn’t immediately understand what it was. This was also true for the barbarians. The barbarians, who were trying to climb the walls, looked at the white light with blank faces. Both sides had realized it too late.

The barbarians and guards on the walls screamed.

The people approaching weren’t barbarians. The dracos, which were rushing like crazy, were obviously allies of the guards! However, where had they come from? There were dark elves and lycanthropes together, so who was leading them?

Caligula couldn’t think. The important thing was that reinforcements had arrived. There was no time to think about it. It wasn’t just Caligula; there were also Barak and the other soldiers on the walls.

From the approaching group, a whirlwind of white light rose into the sky. The light streaking across diagonally in the sky caught everyone’s eyes. The soldiers on the walls as well as the barbarians looked up at the sky.

There was a huge flag of light being held in a hand. A dark blue cloth fluttered in the wind... And a white light surrounded the whole body.

However, that wasn’t all. There was something else that caught the attention of everyone, including Caligula. It was the right hand soaring high in the sky.

“Show them.”

Like everyone else, Carack stared up at the sky and laughed.

Amita sat in Daphne’s arms and frowned while staring up at the sky. They wanted to make certain that the product they tuned was working properly.

“Shutra.”



Caitlin raised a hand to her chest and sent her aura to In-gong through the Starlight Core.

‘Master.’

Green Wind whispered. In-gong, who was flying in the sky using the power of Night Watch, gazed at his right arm. There was a raging cry as he focused all his power on Earth Quaker.

‘Earth Quaker’s Gigantic.’

It wasn’t just White Eagle that had additional parts. At that moment, additional parts appeared in the space around Earth Quaker.

‘A giant’s fist.’ Earth Quaker was temporarily transformed by the instantaneous output.

In-gong stared down at the ground. He poured a generous amount of aura into Earth Quaker and gave an order to Night Watch.

It was a single skill that symbolized the violence of the Great Enkidu, and it poured down like a thunderstorm toward the ground!

In-gong’s fist struck the ground. Not only was there a red and yellow light, but there was also a white and green light as True Destruction exploded among the barbarians and tore into the ground.

There was a wild wind. Everything within a radius of 20 meters around In-gong collapsed. The ground collapsed, while the aura destroyed everything it encountered.

The barbarians outside the scope of True Destruction fell down due to the destruction of the terrain. Caligula and those on the walls also had to grab onto something quickly.

It had only been for a moment, but there was an overwhelming sight of destruction.

There was a deafening silence. Dozens of barbarians were swept away by True Destruction and lost their lives.

However, the mental shock struck all of the barbarians. Even the wild and brave

barbarians were forced to shake from the destruction before them, and they were filled with wonder was mixed in with fear.

In the center of all this, In-gong dismantled Earth Quaker's Gigantic. He raised his left hand while holding the flag of light in the center of the destruction.

'Below the King's Flag.'

Those who saw the flag...

"Ku-ra-ha!"

A huge battle cry tore through the silence. Now that the entire battlefield was paying attention to In-gong, they forgot that more troops existed.

The angry lycanthropes struck the sides of the barbarians, and the dark elves aboard the dracos fired magic over the heads of the lycanthropes. There were various curses that pierced the spirit of the barbarians as well as physical destruction that ruined their bodies.

Caitlin ran to In-gong's side. She had In-gong's white aura as well as her blue aura around her as she ran straight through the barbarians. Seira, Kaparang and Alita followed her, so there was no one who could stand up against them.

Additionally, Carack was accompanied by Karma. In-gong planted the flag of light and gazed at Caitlin's back. This time, he sent his aura to Caitlin.

The 400 reinforcements fought with the barbarian army, and Caitlin's fist smashed a barbarian's head.

Caligula didn't just look on stupidly. He opened the gates and advanced as the 400 defenders fought the barbarians.

The battle didn't last long. The barbarians couldn't recover their morale. Although there were a few barbaric and arrogant barbarians, they were no match for the army of the Demon King's Palace. The dark elves and lycanthropes were elites who had been personally selected by 3rd Queen Sylvia Doomblade and 4th Queen Elaine Moonlight. So, the 400 reinforcements danced boldly through the barbarians.

Among the barbarians, there were those who had lost the will to fight and were slaughtered trying to flee. The barbarian army that had totaled at least 1,500 troops was now shattered.

Kaparang and Alita calmed down the troops and gave a victory shout. Caligula and the base defenders expressed their joy as well.

Approximately 10 minutes after the battle ended...

Caligula and Barak met up with In-gong. No one said anything, but he instinctively knew who the leader of the reinforcements was.

Caligula swallowed his saliva as he stood in front of In-gong. He was shocked that the leader who had descended from the sky like a deity was still just a boy. Moreover, the female lycanthrope who had killed the leader of the barbarians was just a girl.

Caligula took a deep breath to calm down and raised his fist to his chest, a typical salute for a soldier of the army.

“I am the leader of the seventh base, Caligula.”

“I am Barak, his deputy.”

Barak quickly imitated Caligula. Then the satyr standing next to the boy, Karma, spoke with a solemn expression,

“This is 9th Prince Shutra Ignus and 8th Princess Caitlin Moonlight.

Caligula stiffened as he heard the words ‘prince’ and ‘princess’. However, he was easily convinced.

“It is a pleasure to meet Your Highnesses.”

They had the blood of the demon king—the strongest in the Demon World, so it was natural that they would be strong.

Caligula’s gaze was filled with respect. Then In-gong said to Caligula,

“It is nice to meet you. It is abrupt, but from now on, I want you to follow my

command.”

“I will do so.”

There was no reason to disagree. In-gong let out a long breath at Caligula’s instant agreement and ordered,

“Let the soldiers rest. Tomorrow morning, we will leave the seventh base.”

“Huh?”

Caligula was surprised by In-gong’s words. Karma shuddered, while Carack just laughed.

In-gong repeated it for Caligula once more,

“Tomorrow morning, we will occupy the sixth base.”

If the barbarians had occupied it, they would take it from them. If the sixth base was still standing, they would save them like they had done with the seventh base.

They would smash any barbarians they encountered. They would break the barbarians and rally the troops of each base. The more they fought, the more the morale of the army would rise. Then they would go help General Vandal.

Caligula gazed at In-gong with a bemused expression, while In-gong turned away from Caligula and looked toward the east instead.

Then the next morning...

The flag of Conquest fluttered at the sixth base which had just been about to fall to the barbarians.

“Shutra is awesome.”

“Too much. Are you trying to kill me?”

# Chapter 121

## Blitz #4

Despite it being a few hours since the battle ended, Diotima, the lamia and leader of the fifth base, still felt feverish.

The fifth base had been on the verge of being taken. Half of the gate had been broken, and there had been areas on the wall which had been penetrated.

Due to struggling greatly against the barbarians, they had been able to hold on for three days. However, that had been their limit. The only thing left in their future had been to either die at the hands of the barbarians or take down more barbarians before dying.

Then a white glow poured down from the sky. The explosion had been deafening, and Diotima had closed her eyes reflexively.

When she opened them again, Diotima had found herself looking at the back of a king with a white aura around him.

He was the 9th Prince.

However, he wasn't a king; he was still a boy. Diotima had heard rumours about the 9th Prince, who had been called the Prince of Scraps just a few years ago.

Even so, she had no choice but to think of him as a king. His appearance made her think so.

Like the rest of the Evian troops, Diotima was a soldier. She had seen many rough things in Evian where outlaws dominated. It wasn't loyalty to the demon king but the monthly salary that made her stay at the fifth base. However, she had stayed with the fifth base until the end, so she wouldn't accept surrendering to the barbarians.

Despite that, Diotima felt something in her heart the moment she saw the back of the 9th Prince.

It would be fair to say that her heart had been captured. However, it wasn't strange that she had been conquered.

Diotima had made a decision the moment the 9th Prince destroyed the enemies in the vicinity and turned around to hold out a hand to her.

She would follow this person; this person was her king.

It was somewhat embarrassing for a woman her age to be filled with such enthusiasm. However, it couldn't be helped as such feelings had ignited in her heart.

After 9th Prince's appearance, the 8th Princess, the lycanthropes and the dark elves had broken through the barbarians. She had seen the faces of Caligula of the seventh base and Rothov of the sixth base, who had come here as well. When she had asked why they were here, the two of them laughed and gave the same answer.

"King... No, we followed the prince."

Diotima understood their words as they all shared the same feelings.

Of course, she then asked about the seventh and sixth base and was skeptical about the fact that they ran to this place.

Certainly, Diotima could never have imagined it. Anyway, thanks to that, Diotima and the fifth base had been saved.

Although she had fought for three days and nights, sleep didn't come very easily. The fever blooming in her heart overwhelmed the fatigue that had accumulated for three days. Even now, she could see the white flag flickering in the wind when she closed her eyes.

Diotima forced herself to lie down and sleep. However, she couldn't help letting out a sigh of admiration as she recalled the appearance of 9th Prince's back in battle today.

9th Prince...

Evian's saviour, who had rescued three bases in just three days.

She may have witnessed a legendary moment.

A shy smile appeared on Diotima's face.

While Diotima and the other soldiers from each base were building up fantasies about In-gong, his group was scattered around their accommodations with fatigued faces.

It was natural. They'd had to run around wildly, time and time again. Additionally, they'd had to participate in three big battles. It would be strange if they weren't exhausted.

As soon as the battle was over, Carack set up several large tents obtained from the warehouse of the fifth base. There were plenty of supplies in the warehouse, so In-gong kept everything in his inventory except for the things that were absolutely necessary.

It was somewhat awkward to set up a tent in a room, but it didn't seem so strange anymore since this was the third time.

Among the three tents, the largest one was where everybody was gathered.

Caitlin, the most lucid one among them, spoke with a bright smile,

"Shutra is awesome."

He had actually secured three bases in three days. Moreover, he hadn't simply secured them. Caitlin knew that the soldiers of the three bases felt sincere respect and gratitude towards him. The mixed forces of the lycanthropes and dark elves now took In-gong as their leader.

They had been running constantly for three days, and whenever Caitlin looked at In-gong's back, she felt a thrill. She felt like she should always follow him.

Felicia smiled at Caitlin's admiring words. After Caitlin, who was sitting on a chair, spoke, Felicia collapsed onto a leather rug and spoke in a voice like she was dying,

"Too much. Shutra, are you trying to kill me?"

Her voice was playful, so there didn't seem to be any resentment.

In-gong made a very apologetic face from beside her.

"Sorry."

The one who was probably the worst off was Felicia. She had squeezed all her magic into recovery and almost fainted everyday from being so drained. However, it had been inevitable since their rush had been wild and reckless.

Unlike In-gong and Caitlin, she wasn't a warrior. In addition to the physical fatigue, the mental fatigue was severe as well.

"Hurts... My legs are sore..."

Felicia whined as she felt the pain through her whole body, and In-gong looked at Felicia with uncomfortable eyes.

"Sorry, just a little bit more."

He wanted to tell her to take a rest, but unfortunately, he couldn't as Felicia was indispensable when it came to strategy and magic.

"Shutra is too much."

Felicia whined again. Unlike Felicia, Caitlin was her usual self. She was the most energetic person in the group.

"Anyway... let's talk about the future... 6th Princess should get up. You need to maintain your dignity as a princess."

Alita helped raise Felicia up. Felicia moved until her body was half lying on a cushion. Then Alita eventually gave up and sat down next to Felicia.

Kaparang pretended not to notice Felicia and Alita, and said to In-gong,

"9th Prince, the number of troops have increased considerably with the addition of the fifth base. There were three consecutive wins, so the morale is extremely high. It



is also encouraging that we have lost few troops in the meantime.”

The 400 troops at the beginning had now reached approximately 2,300.

In addition to the troops which were added today from the fifth base, there were 400 people stationed at the seventh base and 600 people at the sixth base.

There were some casualties among the soldiers of each base, but the first 400 reinforcements didn't have any losses, proving they were elites.

It was really great considering that the 400 elites had participated in all three battles.

The winning streak meant it was inevitable that morale was high. Moreover, in all three battles, they had saved allied despairing soldiers, so the sense of accomplishment among the soldiers was very high.

Despite the fact that the leaders were tired, this was the best condition they could be in.

Carack asked In-gong,

“Prince, the third and fourth bases are in different locations and have different situations. What do you want to do?”

There were two reasons for In-gong to advance to the sixth and seventh bases.

One was that the bases were in an emergency situation and about to be occupied. The other reason was to avoid isolating General Vandal and allowing him to be defeated by the barbarians once his supply lines were cut off.

The locations of the third and fourth Evian bases were scattered, so they couldn't be saved in the same way. Moreover, the fourth base had already fallen.

They had accumulated a considerable amount of fatigue by advancing straight to the fifth base.

In-gong organized things in his head and said,

“We will wait at the fifth base. Tomorrow will be a day for the soldiers to rest and for

the captured barbarians to be interrogated... We will gather information about those scattered around Evian.”

Nayatra was already questioning the barbarian prisoners as she had special methods to get information from prisoners. Moreover, she had been in charge of interrogation in Knight Saga as well.

“Well, it is reasonable.”

Carack nodded, while Felicia was relieved they wouldn’t be moving tomorrow.

Kaparang spoke again,

“Three days have passed since the emergency situation emerged in Evian, and the Demon King’s Palace should be planning for additional reinforcements. If it is General Vandal, we won’t have to hurry for a while.”

The situation had changed thanks to the three consecutive victories. Once again, it was a truly huge achievement.

‘Reinforcements from the Demon King’s Palace.’

The situation with the barbarians was completely different from the Red Lightning Tribe’s rebellion. The Demon King’s Palace wouldn’t spare their support for something like this.

In-gong closed his eyes and thought for a moment.

He compared the reality current right to the barbarian uprising in Knight Saga.

In Knight Saga, the barbarian king had the Dragon King’s Golden Helmet. As a result, he had been able to unite the barbarians beyond the boundary and formed an unprecedentedly huge army of barbarians.

However, at present, the barbarian king didn’t have the Dragon King’s Golden Helmet.

So, how could he have the strength to gather the barbarians?

‘The Death Knight.’

Naturally, In-gong thought of the Death Knight. Just like how he had held hands with the guardians who had gone crazy in Spider Forest, the Death Knight might be supporting the barbarian king.

If so, how far did the power of the Death Knight stretch?

“The timing is different.”

The timing between In-gong becoming a Conquest Knight and Gerard becoming a Famine Knight was different. In-gong had become the Conquest Knight earlier. However, with this situation, the Death Knight could have been even earlier than him. It wasn’t just a few months, but maybe even years earlier.

If this situation was due to the Death Knight...

What was he aiming for? If he was someone longing for the world to end like the last flame said, were these actions related to bringing about the end?

Moreover, the War Knight...

Did he exist now? If so, what was he doing?

Questions led to more questions. However, In-gong finished organizing his thoughts as he had to focus on Vandal and the barbarians now.

“It’s late. Let’s stop for today.”

Everyone agreed with Alita’s suggestion. Kaparang and Carack left the tent first, while Delia and Alita lifted Felicia up forcefully. However, Felicia shook her head.

“Aunt Alita, why don’t I sleep in the tent with Caitlin today?”

Caitlin rose instantly at Felicia’s question, and Alita frowned, but it wasn’t because Caitlin was sleeping in this tent.

“This is 9th Prince’s tent.”

In-gong and Caitlin had been exhausting their aura everyday. So, in order to speed up

their aura recovery, they slept together like they had done in the lycanthrope villa. Just holding hands increased the speed of aura recovery noticeably.

“It is just sleeping in the same tent. Anyway, there will be Seira and Green Wind as well.”

Felicia said in an annoyed voice, and Caitlin nodded quickly. She seemed very excited by the idea of sleeping with Felicia.

“It can’t be helped. I understand.”

Alita sighed in agreement and Felicia settled back with a contented face, while Caitlin started to prepare her bed next to Felicia.

Alita looked at the sight with a smile and said,

“It is nice to have a good time between sisters. I will see you tomorrow.”

“Goodnight, Aunt Alita.”

Alita patted Felicia’s head gently and left In-gong’s tent.

“Then we are ready.”

Delia was lying on Felicia’s left side while Caitlin was on her right. Seira lay on Caitlin’s right, while In-gong was a short distance away from Seira. Even if their bodies weren’t touching, they could trigger the quad-core if they were within a certain distance.

Some time passed.

In-gong normally slept alone, so it wasn’t easy to sleep in a tent filled with women. Although he was already used to Caitlin and he was exhausted, he couldn’t manage to sleep due to the added presences of Felicia and Delia.

In-gong counted sheep in his head before raising his body quietly. Felicia and Caitlin were sleeping serenely. Caitlin was hugging Felicia tightly like a teddy bear, and she looked really happy.

She had always wanted to get along with the other children of the demon king.

However, ironically, she wasn't a child of the demon king, and this had caused her to fight with the actual children.

'Not anymore.'

In-gong gazed at Caitlin with a relaxed smile. He laughed as Felicia made a loud sound during her sleep.

He didn't know how long he watched the two people while they slept.

A white light suddenly appeared above In-gong's head. Additionally, unlike the usual level-ups, bells started jingling.

Caitlin's eyes opened because of the sound, while Felicia's and Delia's eyes twitched just before they woke up as well. Seira was awakened by the rustling noises the three of them made.

"Shutra?"

"Your Highness?"

In-gong blinked in confusion as they spoke. Then the voice of a woman was heard in In-gong's ears,

[Happy birthday.]

'Huh?'

[You are now 15 years old.]

[Your level has risen.]

[The level of Protagonist Correction has increased.]

[The level of Battlefield Protection has increased.]

[At the age of 15, your physical abilities have improved.]

[You have grown taller.]

[Muscle mass has increased.]

Following the voice, letters made of light were listed one after the other.

He had levelled up during the three battles, and he had now gained another level. Was this a birthday perk? Moreover, once he reached level 30, the level of Protagonist Correction increased as well.

In-gong recalled the tea party with Baikal. At that time, Baikal had talked about birthday presents.

‘Were the birthday presents for today?’

His birthday was today.

It was nice to level up, but it felt a bit awkward. Additionally, he had to explain to Caitlin and the others about what was going on.

It was at that moment...

“Master! Congratulations!”

Green Wind shouted, appeared behind In-gong suddenly.

“Congratulations?”

“Today is the day that Master was born. I know because I am Master’s knight.”

Green Wind replied to Felicia’s question with a wide smile. It seemed like the news about his birthday was given to all of his knights.

“Shutra... your birthday?”

“You should have told me earlier.”

“Congratulations on your birthday.”

“Congratulations.”

Caitlin, Felicia, Delia and Seira spoke in turn.

In-gong nodded again. Anyway, he had levelled up. Unlike usual the usual level-ups, regardless of whether it was a birthday privilege or something else, his aura and mental power were now completely restored.

‘This is good.’

There was nothing wrong with it, and In-gong was happy to reply to everyone.

Simultaneously, a noise was suddenly heard from outside the tent. Everyone’s heads turned toward the entrance of the tent as Carack entered.

Did Carack also appear to celebrate his birthday?

However, that wasn’t the case. In-gong knew it the moment he saw Carack’s face.

Everyone’s gazes focused on Carack as he said,

“General Vandal’s main force was defeated.”

There were thousands of corpses on the desolate land. The smell of death caused the wild beasts and birds to gather, but the number of corpses was overwhelming, and the smell of death couldn’t be removed.

The barbarian army advanced. There was no hesitation in their footsteps despite having caused this tragedy.

The one who led them was...

Barbarian King Karatus.

He was a man born on the battlefield and who was always on the battlefield.

Barbarian King Karatus took a step forward, and he looked toward the north.



# Chapter 122

## Barbarians

General Vandal's main force had been defeated.

General Vandal had come out to intercept the army of the barbarian king, but his purpose had been to stop the army and buy time. Over the last few days, his movements had been consistent with mild conflicts, rather than direct battles.

However, there was news that he had been defeated. This meant that a full-scale war had taken place, and General Vandal's army had been seriously damaged while he escaped.

In-gong was reminded of the battle against the Red Lightning tribe. They had gone out to attack the enemy base, only to retreat after suffering great damage due to the emergence of the swamp mammoths.

Contrary to popular belief, mass casualties didn't occur so easily in a complete war. The massacre occurred mainly when an army was defeated and tried to escape. It was because they were easy opponents while running away. In the battle where the swamp mammoths had appeared, the army had acted pretty well. So, they hadn't lost many troops while escaping.

If Vandal was defeated, it was important to know how he had been defeated. There were still many chances if the power of his army had been maintained. Additionally, General Vandal was also unharmed.

However, it wasn't just that. There was a chance that large fatalities could occur, such as when the barbarians had been crushed by In-gong's troops.

It was late at night, but it wasn't midnight yet, and In-gong's party and the key personnel were gathered together in a warehouse.

Carack laid out a large map on the table, and everyone's gazes focused on the map. Carack moved a pen hurriedly.

“This is the pattern that General Vandal seems to have taken.”

Evian’s seven bases could be divided into three major areas. Bases five, six and seven were in the north while bases one, two and three were in the south, and the fourth base was between the third and fifth bases.

The area Carack drew an X on wasn’t far from the third base.

“The news that General Vandal was defeated was conveyed from the third base. The barbarians hadn’t just defeated Vandal but also pushed toward the third base. Currently, the third base has fallen to the barbarians.”

An additional X was drawn on the third base. Many of those looking at the map made pained faces. The fact that the barbarians had reached that far meant it was really bad.

“Is there no contact from General Vandal?”

Carack frowned at Felicia’s question.

“No, not yet. But considering the last contact and the situation with the third base, it is likely that his situation isn’t very good.”

Carack drew a line from the third base to the second base. The distance between the two bases was so far that it was likely he was wandering somewhere in between.

“The last report from the third base was quite confusing. It seems like the situation is a mess.”

Carack put up the short piece of paper sent through the communicator next to the map.

“General Vandal’s main force was defeated. We are unable to measure the scale of the damage. The third base will be taken soon. Many deaths have occurred. The barbarian king... north?”

Seira frowned while reading aloud the short sentences on the piece of paper precisely. The sentences were beyond common sense.

“Was General Vandal’s army crushed to such an extent that it isn’t worth pursuing? This is General Vandal we’re talking about!”

Felicia cried out in an aghast tone. Caitlin also looked at the map with a worried face. Kaparang shook his head.

“This can’t be. It seems like some experts have split off to trace Vandal, while the rest have turned toward the north.”

There was value in tracking him, but it was up to there. It seemed like more than half of General Vandal’s army had been defeated.

In the somber atmosphere, Caitlin opened her mouth,

“Kaparang, what is the reason why the barbarian king didn’t strike at base one or two?”

“Perhaps he is aiming for Takar.”

“Takar?”

Kaparang nodded at the question. He pointed to the area around Evian on the map.

“Beyond the boundary, it is a barren land that can’t even compare to Evian. For the barbarians, even Evian is a good place to live. Even so, it is unreasonable to just take this place and live in it. If the barbarians occupy Evian, the Demon King’s Palace will move in earnest.”

Kaparang took a deep breath, then he smiled.

“Your Highnesses, didn’t you participate in the fight against the Red Lightning Tribe?”

Caitlin nodded at the question. It had only been a few months ago. So, In-gong remembered it well since it was his first battlefield.

Kaparang continued to explain,

“The same thing happened on the boundary, but the severity is different. Compared to the Red Lightning tribe, the barbarians are much greater in number and more

dangerous. If the barbarians wanted to conquer Evian, the Demon King's Palace would send the captains to stop them."

The Demon World was wide, and the power of the palace was scattered all over.

The captains were the power of the Demon King's Palace.

Moving them had a very heavy meaning. The army captains had the power to shake the heavens and earth and led tens of thousands of troops. There was no species in the Demon World that wouldn't be afraid of them.

"In other words, the barbarians are focusing on destruction and looting, rather than a proper occupation. They can't live on this land. So, they are aiming to break and obtain as much as possible."

Felicia added a supplementary explanation. Then Kaparang spoke again,

"Of course, the barbarian king has shown a power that's incomparable to what he had before. Maybe the barbarians have a different idea this time. But if they choose to go north, then it's likely they are after Takar. It is the best place to eat near Evian."

Caitlin was able to accept it since she had visited Takar directly. Takar had an enormous amount of wealth concentrated in it. They would be able to get more from Takar than from the whole of Evian.

"Is it due to General Vandal that they didn't go to Takar from the beginning?"

Kaparang nodded at Caitlin's question.

"Perhaps that isn't all of it. Maybe they wanted to take control of the bases in order to hit Takar directly, instead of isolating Vandal."

However, that plan had been cancelled due to In-gong. Even his allies had been surprised by the blitz attacks that allowed them to defeat the barbarians and defend three bases. It had probably been a huge surprise for the barbarians.

Alita spoke after a long sigh,

"In the end, there are two main points. Vandal's shattered army is in the west, while

the barbarian king is in the north.”

Alita placed three models on the map. One was General Vandal’s army, another was the barbarian troops pursuing Vandal, and the last one was the barbarian king in the north.

Felicia frowned.

“We need to consider this. Their speed will be slow since they have a large army, but... they are moving within Evian. They will reach here in three days or so.”

It was highly likely that the barbarian king would go to the fifth base after passing through the fourth. After reviewing the barbarian king’s anticipated route, Felicia looked at In-gong.

“Shutra, what do you think?”

Every eye focused on In-gong after the question.

Three children of the demon king were gathered together, but it was clear who the leader of the army was.

Felicia and Caitlin assisted In-gong, but they didn’t come forward. Kaparang and Alita also respected In-gong, so they didn’t protest, let alone the leaders of the three bases who In-gong had saved.

In-gong gazed at the map and exhaled. He spoke in a determined voice,

“Abandon the fifth base and head south to save General Vandal.”

“Your Highness?”

Diotima, the leader of the fifth base, was confused. It was unimaginable for her to abandon the base in the current situation. However, Caligula of the seventh base and Rothov of the sixth base were somewhat convinced as In-gong had already abandoned two bases.

In-gong explained to everyone,

“It is unreasonable to block the barbarian army at the fifth base with our current troops. It is a situation where we don’t know when the reinforcements from the Demon King’s Palace may come.”

The walls of the fifth base were better than the walls of the sixth base, but they were still low. It was difficult to view it as a proper fortress. In this place, it was unreasonable to oppose the main army led by the barbarian king with only 2,000 troops.

Felicia nodded with a serious expression.

“If we take away all the supplies of the fifth base like we’ve done so far... Well, the strong point of the fifth, sixth and seventh bases was their role as supply points. A base without supplies would just be called a shell.”

Diotima was surprised when she heard that all the supplies would be taken, but she was the only one.

In-gong had already taken the supplies of the sixth and seventh bases. Apart from Felicia and Caitlin, no one knew what method had been used, but they weren’t surprised as it had already been repeated three times, starting from Takar.

Of course, even if all the materials were collected, the supply lines would still be cut off if all three bases were occupied.

However, before In-gong’s supplies would run out, the situation would change due to the Demon King’s Palace. Thus, there was no need to consider the long term situation.

“B-but if Your Highness throws away the fifth base, Takar will be in danger.”

Diotima stuttered, and In-gong shook his head.

“There is a lot of distance between Takar and the bases. By the time the barbarian king’s army reaches Takar, we can already save General Vandal and head back. Then we will have enough power to face the barbarian king.”

He didn’t think that General Vandal’s troops would have been slaughtered. It was likely that more troops had escaped.

‘Assemble the remnants of the defeated army. Then create a main force once again.’

“I know that the plan will take a lot of work. But... for me, the soldiers of the Demon King’s Palace are more important than Takar.”

It was a remark that might cause backlash, but all the people here were soldiers of the Demon King’s Palace. So, the leaders of the three bases were deeply impressed by In-gong who prioritized the lives of the soldiers.

“Your Highness...”

Diotima said in a voice mixed with admiration. In-gong smiled back at her. Then Kaparang asked with a serious expression,

“Your Highness, the exact position and situation of General Vandal are unknown. Do you have any plans for this?”

How would he find General Vandal’s troops?

“Perhaps.”

In-gong nodded, and Green Wind appeared. Thanks to her recovered strength, she had the same sacred and mysterious atmosphere like when he first met her at Enger Plains.

However, Green Wind was still Green Wind. She smiled brightly to In-gong as always, and he patted her head.

At the same time, each army was moving in different places.

Paratus escaped from Takar and collected the remnants of the barbarians who had been defeated by In-gong.

The barbarian king had already occupied the fourth base.

Paratus raided the seventh base with a strong army, but he was left with a blank expression when all he discovered was an empty base with no supplies left. He headed

toward the sixth base, but the result was the same. Additionally, although Paratus didn't know it yet, their hunger would continue at the fifth base.

While Paratus was going hungry, the barbarian king was preparing to leave the fourth base. His main destination was the fifth base.

It had been approximately a day and a half since In-gong received news of Vandal's defeat.

Vandal was ready for the last fight of his life.



# Chapter 123

## Barbarians #2

Vandal had been born on the battlefield.

He didn't know whether his mother had been a soldier of the army or a mercenary. Maybe she had just been a pitiful civilian. Anyway, she would have been an ogre.

Vandal was an orphan. He didn't know who his father or mother was.

From the beginning, his father had belonged to the army of the demon king. He belonged to a group that could be called either mercenaries or warlords. Vandal's memories of his childhood were faint, so he didn't know anything more. Still, it was clear that it hadn't been a regular army.

His life had been saved due to the mercy of the mercenary leader, and he had grown up under the care of all the mercenaries as their mascot.

Vandal survived due to the distinctive tough vitality of an ogre and their short childhood. Among the ogres, he was a particularly strong variant. Although an ogre's childhood was short, he had almost no suckling days.

Vandal had been born and raised on the battlefield, so his life was filled with numerous battles. There had been favourable battles and unfavourable ones. There had been overwhelming battles in which massacres had occurred and battles in which there had been a stalemate on both sides. Of course, Vandal had experience as both the slaughterer and the victim.

Numerous battles, numerous defeats and victories... He had hundreds or maybe even thousands of those experiences, and some of those remained unforgettable in his memories.

It was the same for the battle several days ago.

It was a total failure. Among the many battles he had experienced as a general of the

demon king's palace, it was difficult to find a larger defeat.

Approximately 9,000... That was the number of soldiers Vandal had led. He didn't know how many of them lived or died. That fact alone explained how terribly he had been defeated.

The number of troops that Vandal was currently leading amounted roughly to 2,000 or so. Collecting the scattered soldiers would allow him to build a large unit, but the enemy didn't allow it.

Thousands of enemies were chasing after him. However, they weren't the barbarian king's main army. They were only a part of the great army that the barbarian king had raised.

Vandal's soldiers were exhausted. As usual, many dropouts occurred during the night. There were also some who were injured and some who died. Those who thought there was no chance of winning escaped as well.

Vandal, who was at the very front of his troops, moved to the rear of the procession. However, it wasn't to monitor those who wanted to run away.

Vandal stopped in place and looked behind him. A dust cloud could be seen from far away. It was the desperate pursuit of the barbarian king's troops after there had already been a few conflicts over the past few days. As expected, the scale of the pursuers was much larger than Vandal's forces. He had lost strength due to the constant harassment over the past two days.

Vandal stretched and sighed, raising his head to the sky.

Despite having been defeated in the battle against the barbarian king, Vandal attached great importance to his survival. If the army commander lost their life, the army would be lost. In order to defeat the barbarians properly, he needed to survive and lead the troops.

However, it was different now. Vandal decided to be a commander on the front lines.

'No, it isn't even that.'

He was an arrow that had served the military since childhood—a meat shield sent out

to die.

He had to prevent the enemy's advance, raise chaos and make the situation a slightly more favourable for the soldiers fighting. The rewards for the barbarians would vary depending on the merits, and the best prize, General Vandal's head, was right in front of them.

The dust cloud became a little bit bigger. The sound of horseshoes hitting the ground could be heard.

Vandal's ogre guards stood beside him. Among them, the orc who was Vandal's deputy, Zico, was absent as he had died in the battle against the barbarian king.

Vandal took a deep breath and poured strength into his two hands which were holding a weapon. Due to the catastrophic battle against the barbarian king, his left arm wasn't working properly. Its aura circulation wasn't natural either, and there was pain in his right leg every time he moved.

How could he fight against the enemy in this state? However, this was the way Vandal had chosen to live his entire life.

Vandal was reminded of the mercenary leader who had been his idol in his childhood. The mercenary leader had been an orc, and he had used to say the same thing in battle,

'It's a good day to die.'

Vandal laughed. It was bullshit. Was this that day?

"They're coming."

Vandal said. There was a vacancy, so the now 23 members of his guards grabbed their weapons and prepared for battle.

There was more dust. The enemy's shouting could now be heard as well. The screams and sounds of cavalry were indeed amazing.

Vandal roared as he faced the enemies. The roaring seemed to shake the heavens and earth as the cavalry rode on. Some horses panicked and dropped their riders.

Vandal laughed, and his aura rose up like flames.

“Go.”

The situation was like this, and Vandal, his ogre guards and his soldiers rushed forward wildly.

Yakuzan was the chief of the Red Lightning tribe.

He held his weapon in his last fight, instead of running away. He had challenged Vandal, who was sweeping through the orcs.

“Kuhang!”

Vandal roared and wielded a large hammer. Before Vandal’s power, Body Hardening was useless. The barbarians hit by the battle hammer exploded and died.

Vandal felt the battlefield with his entire body. He wielded his battle hammer towards the barbarians on both sides and found himself alone. He felt satisfied as his charge had disrupted the barbarians’ formation.

Dozens of spears flew toward him. The ogre guards were nowhere in sight, but Vandal picked up a barbarian at his feet to use as a shield. However, there were too many spears, and the large spears mangled Vandal’s shoulders, arms and thighs.

As he threw himself at the barbarians, Vandal only protected his head. He moved through the barbarians with a pained roar and blended in with the enemies in order to interfere with the spear attacks.

However, the barbarians didn’t care about any damages to their allies. Among the barbarians, those with a particularly strong red aura around them threw spears.

This time, Vandal scattered aura from his hammer into the air instead of picking up another barbarian, and Vandal’s aura exploded into the sky, destroying the spears or twisting their trajectory.

“Ararararai!”

Vandal gave his ogre battle cry and rushed towards the barbarians with red energy. It was an unimaginable pace for a person with critical wounds all over his body.

The barbarians were trampled on by Vandal, and they died. The barbarians with red energy at the front couldn't avoid or stop Vandal's hammer. Like the other barbarian warriors, their bodies exploded and they died.

Vandal's eyes shone, and the blue aura radiating from him was running wild.

However, a spear then pierced Vandal's back. Vandal swallowed the pain and swung his battle hammer. He was about to hit the enemy who damaged him, but that was it. The barbarians with the red aura rushed in at once. They were many times stronger than the common barbarians, but they still couldn't withstand Vandal's strikes. Every movement made the spears which were already embedded in his body hurt even more.

Vandal put down the battle hammer and used his fists. Some of the barbarians lost their lives to his fists, but it was only for a short time. No matter how much vitality an ogre had, he was still a living being. He had lost too much blood. His life force was scattered, and Vandal's movements became slower. He wasn't able to exert his strength properly.

A few spears were sticking out of his chest, and Vandal coughed up blood. A barbarian before him paused for a moment, and Vandal swung a fist with all his strength. He crushed the face of the man and looked up at the sky.

"Ararararai!"

His last roar.

Vandal laughed excitedly. Instead of waiting for death like Yakuzan, he moved until the end. He raised his fist once again!

Kwang!

The sound came from Vandal's chest, not his fist. A red energy exploded at Vandal's chest, and he fell to the ground. The barbarians ran over to Vandal and stabbed him with more spears.

‘The end.’

Vandal was lucky his heart wasn’t pierced, but he couldn’t go on anymore. With the last of his strength, Vandal squeezed the ankle of a barbarian who had stabbed him, and he stared up at the sky. Yes, there was a clear sky.

‘It’s a good day to die.’

Vandal thought and laughed bitterly. He closed his eyes.

Then a meteor fell from the sky. It was a dark blue meteor. It tore through the sky and exploded to Vandal’s right. A black and a white object revolved around Vandal and pushed all the barbarians away.

Vandal opened his eyes. His ears couldn’t hear properly, but his eyes were still fine. He saw the back of a white-haired man with a blue cloak. Vandal knew that back. Although the appearance was different from what he remembered, Vandal was able to recognize it with one glance.

‘Why?’

Vandal opened his mouth. At the same time, In-gong, the meteor from the sky, raised his right hand which was holding a flag. He stuck it into the ground and shouted,

“Below the King’s Flag!”

Kwaaaaaang!

A pure white light exploded. The light coming from the flagpole soared into the sky and spread in a circle.

King...

It was a king’s back.

In-gong didn’t look back at Vandal. Instead, In-gong looked straight ahead. He could feel the power of War from the red aura. It was the first time he had faced such a power, but he knew what it was instantly.

So, In-gong used Below the King's Flag. He pushed back the power of War using Conquest, and at the same time, he gave Vandal's soldiers in the vicinity the ability to conquer War.

'Conquer.'

The woman with white hair whispered.

She said to him, 'Conquer the power of War. Obey and rule!'

The War Knight wasn't here, and the red energy was merely a remnant of that power. So, it was impossible for the power of a Conquest Knight to be stopped.

In-gong raised the flagpole of light from the ground once again, and the red aura covering the barbarians was peeled off by the shockwave of white energy.

"Shutra!"

Caitlin shouted from within In-gong's arms. Due to the King's Flag, she was wrapped in a white light.

In-gong released her from his arms, then he glanced at White Eagle and Black Eagle which were pushing the barbarians around. The barbarians were strewn all over the place, and In-gong and Caitlin had jumped alone into the middle of the battlefield.

At dawn on the day they heard about Vandal, In-gong had moved the troops of the fifth base to the south. He had predicted Vandal's movement route and moved southwest diagonally, while Green Wind had searched from the sky. Instead of using Below the King's Flag, he had concentrated on the mini-map and searched for Vandal.

By the time In-gong found him, Vandal had already been engaging in combat. In-gong had left Alita to lead the rest of the troops and held Caitlin in his arms. He had then moved ahead on White Eagle.

In-gong had been able to see more of the situation as he moved closer. Vandal had been in the middle of thousands of enemies.

However, In-gong hadn't hesitated. Rather than being afraid, Caitlin had activated the

quad-core and amplified their aura as well. Then they descended. He had used Night Watch's ability to fly and arranged White Eagle and Black Eagle.

And now...

In-gong made a quick judgment and pushed the power of War back with Conquest. He infused Earth Quaker with power, which started to emit angry cries, and activated Conquest again.

"Karma!"

Karma appeared behind In-gong after he used Call. She was surprised to find barbarians strewn around but soon understood why she was called. Before In-gong could call her name, she pulled the broken spears out of Vandal and started to cast special druid recovery spells.

'Master!'

Green Wind called out to In-gong and used Protection of the Wind. The green wind wound around In-gong and Caitlin, while White Eagle and Black Eagle continued spinning around him.

"9th Prince."

In-gong turned back at the quiet voice. The completely bloody Vandal was making an excited smile. Despite the fact that he was dying, he raised his hand slowly, extending only one finger.

There was no time. Conquest had pushed War back, but White Eagle and Black Eagle couldn't block all the barbarians forever.

However, In-gong still approached Vandal. He grabbed the finger lightly like they were shaking hands.

That's how things were.

The white light of Below the King's Flag spread to Vandal, who nodded toward In-gong. In-gong let go of the finger and turned to Caitlin.



“Please look after Vandal and Karma.”

“Leave it to me, and be careful.”

“Noona as well.”

The two exchanged a small smile and shared their aura through the quad-core. Caitlin stood beside Vandal with her white and blue aura, while In-gong called White Eagle and Black Eagle to him. A single white shield was placed on In-gong’s left arm.

The result caused a gap. The barbarians noticed this and shouted with glee. They rushed toward In-gong from all sides.

‘Master.’

Green Wind said. Caitlin’s aura was transformed into the dragon style in In-gong’s body.

‘Dragon Blood.’

Dragon style was then invoked...

And all that power was devoured by one thing—

“Black Specter.”

In-gong chanted amidst the barbarians’ roars.

With Violent Kaltein’s equipment, he triggered Night Watch’s super special move.

# Chapter 124

## Barbarians #3

Night Watch fluctuated. It moved around In-gong like there was wind blowing. Night Watch seemed like a dark blue liquid. In a short burst of time, the blue colour grew closer to the dark end of the spectrum.

It was just in the blink of an eye.

In-gong and Night Watch disappeared into pitch darkness. An abundant black smoke took their place, exploding and spreading out everywhere.

It was like an angry wave. The black smoke swallowed everything within a 20-meter radius of where In-gong had previously been standing.

In-gong had become the black smoke, and he recognized everything within the black smoke. The moment In-gong struck, black blades formed from the smoke.

Padadadada!

Hundreds or thousands of birds seemed to take flight at the same time, and the black smoke shook with a terrible sound. The barbarians screamed as their blood gushed out.

If In-gong were to classify it, the attack would be a wide area attack. It was a technique that had the high maneuverability of the black smoke and the black blades which smashed into the enemy!

The black smoke exploded again with a popping sound.

In-gong turned back into his original shape, and all the barbarians in his range fell down.

Karma, who was in the middle of curing Vandal, stopped at the sight. Caitlin's mouth dropped open as well. The barbarians outside the range were astonished and tried to

run away.

In the void on the battlefield, In-gong raised the flag of light. At that moment, Caitlin sensed something. There wasn't much time left to move among the barbarians who were frozen with shock. So, she moved hurriedly.

"Shutra!"

Caitlin shouted loudly. In-gong turned back reflexively and saw Caitlin lifting Vandal with both hands. Vandal was very heavy, but his limbs were being drawn off the ground. The sight of the slender Caitlin lifting Vandal was amazing.

"Caitlin is awesome."

In-gong spoke unwittingly, and Caitlin just frowned before urging In-gong again. Her arms and legs were trembling.

In-gong smiled and pushed off from the ground. He approached Caitlin and grabbed her waist with his left arm.

Then Blink!

A blue smoke exploded. After using Night Watch's power, In-gong appeared in a location that was over a dozen meters away.

The barbarians regained their spirit, but it was already too late. Some of them threw spears hurriedly, but White Eagle and Black Eagle blocked the attacks easily.

'Master!'

Green Wind called out to In-gong, and he understood what she meant. If this continued on, he wouldn't be able to leave the battlefield with Vandal. Caitlin's arms were trembling, but she couldn't abandon Vandal in the middle.

In-gong crossed the space once again with Blink. He landed among Vandal's troops instead of among the enemies.

As soon as their feet touched the ground, Caitlin put Vandal down. In fact, she almost dropped him, but it couldn't be helped.

In-gong released Caitlin and planted the flag of light into the ground once again. Although the shockwave didn't spread like the first time the king's flag was activated, light gushed towards the sky and gave the power of Conquest to those around him. The energy of War around the barbarians was also blown away.

“Arararararai!”

The surviving ogre guards cried out loudly. Thanks to the power of Conquest, they rushed forward instead of approaching In-gong. They smashed the barbarians in front of them with their fists and weapons.

It was the same for the other soldiers. They had gained the power of Conquest and were beating up the barbarians.

The barbarians were confused about losing the power of War, but they didn't break down. They shouted angrily too and attacked Vandal's troops. Living in the cold land beyond the limit line, they were powerful warriors even without the power of War.

It transformed into a melee.

In-gong added power to the flag of light instead of fighting. Karma healed Vandal as much as she could, while Caitlin smashed the barbarians approaching them.

At the same time, White Eagle and Black Eagle were working hard. In the midst of all this fighting, In-gong kept an eye on the mini-map. He watched the battlefield from high in the sky and was delighted when the time he was waiting for finally came.

“They're coming.”

Those who rushed toward the pillar of light... Those who would crack the balance of the two armies...!

Caitlin finally realized it. Her keen hearing could sense the sound coming from the earth.

It was coming from the left side of the battlefield—the north when considering the orientation.

Dracos were running forward with all their strength. Dark elves and lycanthropes were riding on those dracos which were running at three times their speed.

It was a group which had tried repeatedly to catch up to In-gong.

Kaparang, who was riding on the draco with Alita, took a deep breath. He looked at the battlefield and shouted,

“Beast Form! Go!”

Kaparang’s flesh swelled greatly. He became a silver werewolf and leapt off the back of the draco. The draco stopped running and almost collapsed from exhaustion. Alita jumped down from the top of the draco to stroke and praise it, then she raised her head and saw the battlefield.

The lycanthropes were covering the sky, while 200 animals were piercing the sides of the barbarians with sharp teeth and claws.

Alita pulled out a sword. The dark elves didn’t participate in this battle just as a means of transportation. Most of the dracos couldn’t fight, but that didn’t mean the dark elves were unable to.

“Let’s go, support the fools from behind.”

Alita said with a laugh, and the other dark elves pulled their weapons. With the strength of their powerful magic, the dark elves helped the lycanthropes.

The total number of these troops was slightly less than 400. In a battlefield where thousands were tangled together, it was just a small handful.

However, they broke the balance of the battlefield. They confused and broke the barbarians.

Like a tightly pulled thread being broken, the battlefield changed at once. The barbarians were now on the defensive.

Then the finishing blow arrived.

“I am a little late!”

Carack shouted from far away. He came with all the soldiers from the fifth, sixth and seventh bases.

Approximately 2,000 people walked forward instead of charging. Their slow march towards the battlefield was somewhat different from a ferocious dash, but the effect was similar to increasing the pressure on the barbarians.

Some of the barbarians looked back. As soon as some of them started to run away, this feeling spread and the barbarians were suddenly escaping.

In-gong realized that the time had come, and it was time to pursue the barbarians.

“Green Wind.”

White Eagle and Black Eagle came smoothly at In-gong’s call.

‘Master.’

Affection mixed with voice response and green winds white repair. In-gong smiled and got on top of White Eagle. In some ways, it was like a white horse.

It was good to fight, but right now, In-gong’s role was something else.

In-gong raised the flag of light and shouted with the power of Conquest,

“Full force! Charge!”

He waved the flag with a clear command. White Eagle increased in altitude gently so that everyone could see In-gong.

The soldiers responded to his cry.

The ogre guards voiced their unique battle cry, while the lycanthropes, who had occupied three bases with In-gong, roared, and the dark elves quickly added to the lycanthropes’ cries.

The mixed reinforcements of dark elves, lycanthropes, the troops of three bases and Vandal’s troops...

All of them became one under Conquest's flag. They rushed in according to In-gong's words and overwhelmed the battlefield.

In-gong looked at their charge while holding the flag up high.

Caitlin stayed with In-gong instead of going to fight, and Felicia collapsed with Daphne, gasping for breath after all the recovery magic she had to do. Nayatra, who was guarding Felicia, stared at In-gong on the white shield with shining eyes.

Carack wielded his axe. Caitlin's aide, Seira, assisted Carack while Delia gazed at everything from far away. Amita, who was standing next to her, cheered them on.

Karma finally pulled out the last spear from Vandal's body, and she used her last recovery magic on Vandal. Despite the desire to fall unconscious, he resisted and kept his eyes on a certain point.

'9th Prince.'

Vandal gazed at In-gong, and there was an unknown smile on his face.

The pursuing army had been destroyed.

It took a while for this fact to be reported.

The barbarian king's main army had already reached the fourth base, so the distance between them and the ones who pursued Vandal was considerable. If the pursuing army was in perfect condition, they would be able to convey the news. However, the army was in a shattered state.

The unsuccessful army scattered, but Evian was an unfamiliar land for the barbarians. It would take more imagination than they had to return to the fourth base to search for the barbarian king.

Paratus, who almost fainted at the sight of the empty fifth base, decided to wait there for orders from the barbarian king. The surviving barbarians were reaching their limit as their food supply would run out in just a few days. They were fighting against

starvation, not the army from Evian.

In-gong won the battle and moved to the second base, while Vandal's soldiers swept away the remnants of the barbarians.

Two days after the battle with the pursuing army...

After the barbarian king left the fourth base and headed toward the fifth base, the barbarian king changed the direction of his march.

Paratus, stationed at the fifth base, commenced an attack on the south.

At the same time, the remnants of Vandal's defeated army started to move.

"It is late but happy birthday. This is my gift."



# Chapter 125

## Barbarians #4

“The ebb and flow of peace.”

“A short peace.”

It had been a day since arriving at the second base and two days after the battle with the pursuing army.

The remnants of Vandal’s army had been able to gather. There were Vandal’s original soldiers and the handful of soldiers belonging to the third base which had collapsed. They had saved approximately 2,000 troops, and Vandal still had approximately 2,000 troops when In-gong saved him. So, it was around 4,000 in total.

‘Vandal originally had an army of 9,000... This is moderately good.’

It was nearly half of his army.

It was a significant achievement considering General Vandal had been defeated by the barbarian king. Moreover, it had only been two days, and this many soldiers had already been recovered. As time passed, more troops were gathering, so In-gong could expect that number to grow in the next few days.

“It is a short but precious peace. Why don’t you rest for today? You were moving around a lot yesterday.”

Carack offered with a smile, and In-gong nodded his head slowly.

In-gong had been busy circulating around the second base yesterday and helping with the scattered troops. Thanks to sharing Green Wind’s gaze and the mini-map, he had been able to achieve significant results, but the fatigue had accumulated. Come to think of it, he hadn’t had a proper night of sleep since he first left Takar.

“Yes, I want to relax today.”

Of course, he couldn't really afford to relax. However, he needed to rest to restore his spirit.

In-gong answered and stretched out on a long chair. In-gong was currently at the second base, which contained fairly high quality accommodations as they were for generals to stay in.

Unlike the sixth and seventh bases, which were closer to supply points, the second base was truly a fortress, so the scale was different. The walls were high and durable, and there were many rooms in the base.

Carack looked at In-gong lying down, and he sat down on one of the empty seats. It was similar to a reception room, so there were plenty of chairs beside the one that In-gong was lying on. Carack was as tired as In-gong, so the two of them rested in silence instead of talking. After many minutes passed... there was the sound of knocking.

"Shutra, I'm entering."

Felicia's voice was heard from outside the door. Before In-gong could reply, the door opened and Felicia and Delia entered the room, with Caitlin and Seira following them.

"Did you get some rest?"

Felicia asked as she saw In-gong lounging on the long chair. It was obvious that she was asking for a seat, so In-gong lowered his legs and got up into a sitting position.

"Somewhat. Noona, aren't you tired? You look a little thin."

Felicia sat down at the end of the long chair and scoffed at In-gong's words.

"Someone drove me harshly day and night."

"I know that I am a bad guy."

"Yes, you have a conscience."

In-gong and Felicia stared at each other and then laughed.

“Well, it was still my choice. It is my natural duty as a princess.”

Felicia had exhausted her magic until she had been on the verge of fainting almost everyday for a week. In-gong’s super fast plan would have failed from the beginning if it hadn’t been for Felicia’s painful sacrifice.

“Daphne is ill, but she is also very satisfied. Not only did we manage to save three bases, but we managed to save General Vandal as well.”

Felicia made a very pleased expression. She had a lot of pride because she rescued a lot of people, including Vandal, but she also liked Daphne’s attitude.

In-gong nodded in agreement, then he took a potion from his inventory and handed it to Felicia.

“Now, you should take this. I will need you tomorrow as well.”

It was a white potion for restoring fatigue. Felicia received the potion bottle reflexively and stared at In-gong with a pout.

“Aren’t you really too much?”

She looked at Caitlin for support. Caitlin nodded and replied with only one word,

“Shutra.”

Many things were implied in that word, and Felicia laughed.

“That’s right. It is Shutra.”

“I’d prefer if you stop that.”

Caitlin laughed at In-gong’s request and sat down beside Felicia. Felicia hugged Caitlin and said to In-gong,

“Here, take this.”

“Huh?”

In-gong asked, and Felicia glanced at Delia before giving a signal. Delia approached In-gong with a long box in her hands.

“It is late but happy birthday. This is my birthday present.”

It was moderately luxurious, so it didn’t seem to be prepared in a rush.

In-gong made a surprised expression, and Caitlin explained,

“I heard Baikar orabeoni’s words at the tea party that it would be Shutra’s birthday soon. So, when we were in Takar, I went shopping with Unni.”

The tea party had been right before their departure, so there had been no way to prepare a present in the Demon King’s Palace.

“Oh, is that so?”

“Uh, yes. I wanted to buy you a present, so I agreed to go there.”

Felicia said with a laugh.

In-gong understood what had happened in Takar. He had thought it was a bit odd that they separated with just Carack watching In-gong, but he had never thought there would be a reason like this.

“This is my gift, and Caitlin has a separate one. Open it quickly.”

Felicia prompted, and In-gong quickly accepted the box. His heart was throbbing.

“Open it quickly.”

Carack urged In-gong like he was curious. In-gong opened the box and blinked.

“Uh, a drink?”

Inside the black box, there was a bottle of classy, dark blue wine.

“You are 15 years old, so you can drink now.”

He didn't know if it was based on dark elf standards, gandharva standards or the standards of the Demon King's Palace.

Felicia explained further,

"The first alcohol must be learnt properly. I also learnt to drink with this wine. It is a great drink, so learn well from it."

When she finished talking, she winked softly. It seemed like Felicia wanted to learn with him. However, it wasn't just Felicia. Carack also had a similar expression.

In-gong saw both of their faces and laughed. He didn't like alcohol, but he was thankful for Felicia's intentions.

"Shutra, open my gift."

Caitlin spoke hurriedly, and Seira handed him a very large box.

In-gong opened the box and tilted his head.

"Uh... pillow?"

It really was a pillow. It was also very big. The pillow was wrapped in a luxurious purple cloth, and its surface was as smooth as silk.

"Yes, it is a pillow for a good night's sleep. Not only is it excellent for fatigue, but there is a really cool hidden feature. Do you know what the feature is?"

Caitlin asked with a bright laugh. It seemed like she wanted to surprise In-gong, rather than actually expect him to know.

In-gong touched the pillow, and just like when he touched other items, several phrases popped up.

[Lucid Dream Pillow]

[It is a magic pillow that gives the owner whatever dream he wants, once every three days.]

[You can design the background and characters in the dream.]

[\* The dream has a strong impact, so be careful because it can affect your reality.]

[\* The dream time is controlled in order to prevent overuse.]

[\* It is possible to use up to a maximum of 10 times.]

Caitlin said it wasn't just a pillow. It was a pillow that allowed him to dream whatever he wanted once every three days, but it was also limited to 10 times.

"A magic pillow that lets me dream what I want?"

"Um, how did you know?"

Caitlin's startled blue eyes shone. Felicia clicked her tongue and said to Caitlin,

"Shutra."

It truly was a universal answer. Caitlin was convinced, while Felicia narrowed her eyes.

"I'm telling you in advance, but it is a type of mental drug. So, it is harmful to use it continuously. It might be difficult to distinguish the gap between dreams and reality. And also -"

"Also?"

"Isn't it really expensive and difficult to obtain? It really isn't cheap. Caitlin was lucky enough to stumble across this among some relics from a ruin. The owner of the store didn't know its proper performance. Otherwise, it would've sold at a very high price at auction. It is good enough among items of the same series."

"A vivid dream that feels more like reality than reality."

The salesperson had been unaware of its true worth, but Felicia and Caitlin had recognized it.

Caitlin nodded.

“Yes, yes. We were quite lucky. Shutra is truly watched over by the heavens.”

Caitlin said with a warm smile. In-gong patted the pillow and said,

“Thank you, it is really good.”

“Yes, then tell me later about what you dreamed.”

Caitlin said innocently. Then Carack bolted upright and cried out hurriedly,

“Princess, you shouldn’t ask that. Prince is not in his prime.”

“Huh?”

Caitlin asked with confusion, and Seira and Delia avoided her gaze. Both of them were blushing.

‘No?! I don’t need such consideration!’

In-gong howled inwardly, but Carack just gazed at him with a strange smile.

In the midst of the chaos, Felicia opened her fan. However, he could see that the tips of her ears were red.

“Anyway, do you know about General Vandal’s status? I am nervous about the barbarian king’s movements.”

Vandal’s injuries were really severe. Despite drinking recovery potions for two days, he still wasn’t fully healed. However, the vitality of a blood ogre was flowing through him, and Vandal was also a master of aura. He would be able to stand up in the next day or two.

He felt sorry toward Vandal, but the most important thing right now was the barbarian king, not Vandal’s status. The barbarian king had been informed about the demise of the pursuers and changed his movements.

“The result of Nayatra’s questioning should come out soon.”

It was the result of interrogating the pursuers, not the barbarians caught at the fifth, sixth and seventh bases. They were the ones likely to have new information about the barbarian king.

‘The power of War.’

The red aura that the barbarians had been surrounded with... What was going on? Was the War Knight cooperating with the barbarians? Or was it possible that the barbarian king was the War Knight?

He needed a little bit more information. So, he had no choice but to wait for Nayatra.

“Okay, is it time to go?”

Felicia stood up from her seat, and Caitlin immediately followed suit. In-gong got up after placing Felicia’s and Caitlin’s gifts in his inventory.

Right before she left the room, Caitlin grabbed In-gong’s hand and said,

“Shutra, you’ve grown taller.”

Originally, he had been level with Caitlin’s height, but he was now slightly taller. In-gong laughed and nodded.

“Sooner or later, I may even be taller than Felicia noona.”

“Omo, can I look forward to that?”

Felicia replied exaggeratedly. Carack came forward.

“Prince will grow much bigger in the future.”

“Of course. He is the man who will become the demon king.”

Felicia said mischievously, but there was a serious tone behind it as she left the room quickly. Instead of talking further, everyone left the room. It wasn’t just Felicia who felt this way after fighting for days and nights.



Everyone who had fought under the banner of Conquest shared the feeling.

Soon after, In-gong's party headed to meet Vandal at the base. Then a lot of people hurried to report to them.

There was news about the barbarian king.

"It is an unexpected move."

# Chapter 126

## Barbarians #5

The barbarian king departed from the fourth base and headed toward the fifth base, but it was literally just for a moment.

The fugitives joined up with the barbarian king, and he headed towards the north again. It was a move that showed indifference to the second base.

“It is an unexpected move.”

Vandal, who was lying in bed, raised his upper body and greeted In-gong’s group. He was four meters tall, so despite lying down, In-gong wasn’t eye level with him.

The barbarian king was ignoring the troops stationed at the second base and heading north. The fifth, sixth and seventh bases were already empty, so Vandal could only presume that the barbarian king’s destination was Takar.

It was truly an unexpected move.

However, Vandal didn’t share Felicia’s and Caitlin’s quandary. Of course, the barbarian king’s policy of leaving troops behind him and going to the north was strange, but he understood it.

Vandal noticed the two people’s confused states and explained,

“The barbarian king destroyed my army before heading north. There are two reasons for this. One, he was concerned about a rear attack. The other is to buy some time in order to block the road.”

“Block the road? Is it the way back over the Eastern Limit Line?”

Vandal nodded at Felicia’s question.

“That’s right. It is due to geographical reasons. It is impossible to cross the Eastern

Limit Line toward Takar without going through Evian. There is something blocking the way beyond the limit line.”

An unknown land was beyond the limit line. They could guess based on the barbarians they saw, but there was no clear reason.

This time, it was Caitlin who asked,

“General Vandal, the barbarians fear... Are they worried about the reinforcements from the Demon King’s Palace?”

“That’s right. The barbarians are afraid the captains will interfere. Burning Takar means that Evian’s defenses have been breached. The captains are more likely to intervene.”

The Demon World was very wide, and the army captains were generally stationed in the north. Therefore, the captains rarely appeared at the boundaries, but there were incidents where it had happened. If Evian were broken through and Takar were taken, the captains were likely to move.

Vandal thought the barbarian king would lead the army and advance to the second base.

Only then would it be possible to create an easy situation to fight or escape the later reinforcements from the Demon King’s Palace. From the standpoint of the barbarians, it would be the worst situation if the troops of the second base joined with the reinforcements of the Demon King’s Palace.

Nevertheless, the barbarian king left the troops of the second base and headed to Takar.

“They aren’t lured here...”

In-gong muttered in a small voice. It was almost a knee-jerk thought.

The second base was a solid fortress. The walls were high, and there was even a moat. It wasn’t easy to occupy the fortress, especially when the old defense forces, Vandal’s army and the troops led by In-gong, totalled to almost 8,000. Therefore, it was the best for the demon king’s side to fight at the second base, while it was the worst from the

standpoint of the barbarians.

Carack grasped In-gong's words and frowned.

"Indeed, is this them taking the initiative in a big fight? Instead of going to a disadvantageous battlefield, they are forcing us to make a choice."

The barbarian king was in the north. The intervention of the captains or reinforcements from the palace were all future events. When looking at the second situation alone, the troops of the second base were placed at a crossroads of choice.

Felicia frowned and said,

"We have abandoned three bases... It isn't an exaggeration to say that the fourth base isn't far from Takar. If we leave this alone, Takar really will be captured by the barbarians. We can't allow that situation to happen."

"But if we leave the second base in order to fight them, they would force us to fight in a place that is suitable for them."

Currently, it was estimated that the barbarian king had between 13,000 and 14,000 troops. It was almost twice the size of the troops stationed at the second base. Moreover, the elite cavalry, which the barbarian king led, exerted great power when fighting on the plains. Fighting on the plains should be avoided as much as possible.

It was a dilemma.

If they let Takar fall, the Evian defense mission would fail. However, if they moved north from the second base, they would have to fight the barbarians in disadvantageous terrain. The barbarian king couldn't let the initiative slip away. Instead of being dragged by In-gong's momentum, he headed north to Takar first.

How should In-gong respond to this?

Vandal didn't give an opinion. He just gazed at In-gong with calm eyes which didn't seem to belong to an ogre. He seemed to be waiting for In-gong's answer.

Felicia and Caitlin also looked at In-gong. Then all the people in the room, including Alita and Kaparang, focused on In-gong.

What would be his choice? How would 9th Prince handle this situation?

In-gong exhaled, then he answered in a quiet voice,

“Fight.”

“Shutra?”

In-gong laughed at Caitlin’s surprise. He raised his eyes higher and gazed into Vandal’s eyes.

“We can’t let Takar be captured. If they want to make it difficult for us, then we just need to overcome it.”

The basis of the strategy was to make it difficult for the opponent. The more difficult they made it, the less of an advantage the enemy would have.

“9th Prince, the plan?”

Vandal asked. Alita and Kaparang also made interested expressions. It was because in this situation, In-gong couldn’t just come up with a simple solution.

“Don’t let the barbarian king take the initiative. Force the opponent to make difficult choices.”

In-gong replied in a calm tone.

The second base’s forces departed.

They numbered approximately 8,000. That was virtually Evian’s total power, except for the minimum needed to defend the bases.

The barbarians were willing to face the demon king’s army. So, instead of rushing, the barbarian king kept a normal speed. Since the starting points were different, there was a distance between the barbarian king’s army and the demon king’s army. In order to narrow the gap, the demon king’s army maintained a fairly fast speed.

The distance between the two armies gradually narrowed. By the time the barbarian king joined up with Paratus near the fifth base, the distance was narrowed to only half a day.

However, it was just up to there.

The demon king's army remained exactly half a day away from the barbarian king's army. They didn't get any closer or further away. Whenever the barbarian king's army stopped or reversed, the demon king's army also did the same thing.

This happened in real time, so the barbarian king couldn't force them to move closer.

Moreover, the difference in maneuverability was great. The demon king's army didn't bring a supplies unit, so it was one of the main factors that increased their speed. The soldiers didn't have to carry supplies. Thus, their movements were slightly lighter. The demon king's army stayed firm despite the barbarian king's attempts to narrow the distance.

This time, the barbarian king was in a difficult situation. If he continued north, he would reach Takar, but the demon king's army would be behind him.

Takar was its own area. It was a city that had the power to protect its huge wealth from the outlaws. So, naturally it had its own defense force. It was relatively easy to deal with Takar's army, but it was a different story if the barbarian king had to deal with both sides at the same time.

The barbarian king was forced to choose: fight the battle at Takar in the north; or go to a place other than Takar and stop there.

Both options weren't good. In particular, the latter method was a waste of time and materials. However, it wasn't bad for the demon king's army. From the outset, the purpose of the army was to protect Evian, not destroy the barbarian king.

Moreover, according to the results of Nayatra's questioning, the barbarians were lacking supplies. It was because the leader of the fourth base had burnt all the supplies right before it had been occupied.

Although the barbarian king's attacks were a success, he had gained few things from

the third and fourth bases, while In-gong had taken all the supplies of the fifth, sixth and seventh bases. It was a type of field tactic. The basis of the strategy was to make it difficult for the opponent. In-gong didn't miss this fact and the barbarian king was forced to choose.

Confronted with such a demand, the barbarian king responded once again.

"They are moving."

In-gong said as he shared Green Wind's gaze and looked at the mini-map.

The barbarian king was heading straight to Takar. He was increasing the speed of his advance, like he had made up his mind.

It was good that the entire Evian area was a wilderness. It was a wide wilderness without any particular obstacles, so it was possible to see far away. If it were a place other than Evian, he wouldn't have been able to see the movements of the barbarian king's army, even with sensory sharing and the mini-map.

Felicia and Caitlin, who explained every situation with 'Shutra', accepted it easily, but Vandal was different.

Unlike the two people who knew about his inventory ability, Vandal really didn't know anything. Therefore, the ability to see a distance using the mini-map, and the ability to store enough food and water for 8,000 people was literally thought to be 'great magic'.

In the end, Vandal just admired In-gong, like Alita and Kaparang.

The 9th Prince was a sleeping dragon. He had been hiding his claws for years, but he was exposing them now.

Carack remarked on In-gong's words,

"Did the barbarian king decide to fight at Takar?"

"Perhaps."

If he stopped his army here, he would have to go back without any profit. Therefore, the barbarian king chose the unfavourable battle at Takar. If so, this was also good.

Carack delivered In-gong's command, and the demon king's army increased their advancing speed.

Then the next morning...

The barbarian king's army arrived at Takar.

The sky was high and the winds were strong.

The barbarian king looked at Takar from the back of a giant, black horse. Next to him were Paratus and several other barbarians.

The barbarian king turned his head and looked back. He saw the demon king's army which was a far distance away.

It was exquisite distance control. Although the distance was shorter than half a day, it wasn't a distance in which the barbarian king could strike them suddenly. Additionally, they wouldn't narrow that distance until the barbarians attacked Takar.

9th Prince...

He had defeated the forces of the barbarian king at the seventh, sixth and fifth bases. Not only had he rescued General Vandal, he had also smashed the pursuing army. 9th Prince was an interesting enemy. According to Paratus and the survivors, he was still a young boy, so the barbarian king was curious about him.

'I will find out soon.'

The barbarian king—Karatus turned with a smile. He was 2.5 meters tall with an athletic body, and he carried a large mace on his shoulder. Its size and weight were really great, so it wasn't an exaggeration to call it a siege weapon.

The barbarian king's eyes narrowed. He exhaled, and at the same time, a red aura appeared around him—the mighty power of War.



“Ara, the demon king’s army. Let’s fight hard.”

The barbarian king no longer looked back. He ran straight towards the gates of Takar like a black flash.

The 13,000 barbarians roared simultaneously. They pulled out their weapons and followed their king.

With a strong wind blowing, the battle for Takar began.

# Chapter 127

## Dragon Heart

It was a natural story, but it wasn't easy to fight both the front and rear at the same time. They were surrounded from the beginning, and once one side collapsed, the other side would collapse as well. Indeed, it was a disadvantageous fight.

Obviously, the number of barbarians was greater than that of the demon king's army which was following behind. However, that story changed when Takar's defense troops were added. The barbarians couldn't enjoy the numbers advantage.

Nevertheless, the barbarian king had attacked Takar, and Takar's troops were in front of him while the demon king's army was behind.

If so, how would he fight?

Ideally, he would want to fight against the demon king's army away from Takar. Takar's defense troops weren't part of the demon king's army, but the barbarians could escape the pressure of a simultaneous attack if they fought a certain distance away from the immovable wall.

However, that was just an ideal wish. The demon king's army and Takar's defense troops weren't stupid. The demon king's army wouldn't participate until the barbarian king's army had attacked Takar, and Takar wouldn't waste such an opportunity.

Therefore, the barbarian king picked a simple way to get rid of the complex dilemma—simplify the situation.

“Ku-pa-ha!”

“Ku-pa-ha!”

The barbarians rushed toward Takar's walls with a characteristic battle cry, while the barbarian king was the one leading them.

The barbarian king's rush was strange. He jumped out like he was attacking alone. None of the barbarians were able to stay by their king's side.

Takar's defense troops fired their ranged weapons hastily, and arrows poured down from the sky like rain.

The barbarian king didn't even think of blocking the rain of arrows. He just ran and broke through the rain of arrows with his speed. A great many arrows poured down in the place where the barbarian king had already passed, but none of them passed the king.

Takar's defense chief, Paion, was confused. The barbarian king had broken through the rain of arrows with a super fast maneuver. However, he couldn't cross the walls with just this. In front of a variable called height, even a speed machine was forced to be powerless.

What was the barbarian king thinking as he rushed to the wall?

There was no time to think. Having surpassed the rain of arrows, the barbarian king arrived in front of Takar's walls before the archers could fire a second wave.

The barbarian king laughed and poured strength into his hand which was holding the mace. He rushed toward Takar's gate without reducing his speed at all. The red power of War soon surrounded his arms and mace.

"Perhaps?"

Someone shouted. Some were laughing while others were panicking.

The barbarian king was rushing toward the gate. The giant mace and his hands were emitting a huge red energy.

All types of attacks rained down from the walls, but the barbarian king ignored them again. He placed his feet on the back of the galloping black horse and looked at one sole point. Then the barbarian king jumped. The rain of arrows poured down on the heads of the other barbarians. Paion breathed in, and the magicians on the walls aimed at the barbarian king.

The barbarian king landed on the ground, swinging his mace at the gate.

Kwang!

It was like thunder shook the heavens and the earth, and the red aura exploded with a huge roar.

The barbarian king's special move from his weapon, Skull Crusher, was added to his power. The gate could not withstand the blow. Almost all the parts connecting the gate to the walls were destroyed, and the wreckage of the gate fell to the ground. Even a part of the wall collapsed.

Confronted with the unimaginable blow, everyone was silent. It seemed like the entire battlefield was frozen.

The barbarian king grinned wildly in the calm that the destruction had created. Instead of roaring to praise his accomplishment, he climbed back on top of his black horse and dug into Takar's walls.

The barbarians shouted with pleasure.

Takar's defense troops were overwhelmed. The gate was breached as soon as the battle began, and the one who had destroyed the gate was now inside.

"Kupaha!"

"Kupaha!"

The barbarians stampeded toward the collapsed gate. Paion moved defense troops to the gate hurriedly, but it wasn't easy. Fear and agitation dulled the hands and feet of the defense troops. Moreover, there was the barbarian king. He didn't wait for the barbarians; he ran straight toward the castle.

The defense was broken, but the shattered gate wasn't the only problem. The barbarians threw hooks toward the walls. They climbed over the walls and laughed as the defense troops weren't in the right place.

A disaster had occurred only a few minutes after the battle had started.

The demon king's army saw all of this. They had been waiting for the barbarians to

attack Takar, but there was no reason to wait now. If they made the wrong move, Takar would fall.

The barbarian king's choice was a terrible melee. Rather than fighting against enemies at the rear and front, he chose to dig into one side and cause confusion.

It was only possible due to the barbarian king's transcendent streak.

In-gong was reminded of the lycanthrope subjugation. At the time, Caitlin had done something similar to the barbarian king. She had destroyed the gate with one blow and transformed a siege into a terrible melee.

It was a super special move... or a technique with equivalent power.

In-gong didn't delay any longer and ordered a charge hastily. Kaparang and Alita hastened to spread the order, and the demon king's army sprang at the barbarians.

In-gong checked the mini-map to determine the placement of the barbarians. As expected, less than half of the total force had rushed toward Takar. The rest of the troops were gathered in the middle of the battlefield, preparing to meet the demon king's army.

They would block the demon king's army until the barbarian king took Takar.

No, it wasn't that simple—they were gathering to rush over here.

In-gong watched them from where he was seated on Maybach. His heart was pounding so hard that it was almost painful.

The barbarians were surrounded with a red, fire-like aura. It was the power of War. It raised the barbarians' strength, and their angry roars seemed to pierce through the sky.

In-gong didn't sit idly. While running on Maybach, he raised the king's flag.

The white power of Conquest spread to the demon king's army, and it pushed at the angry momentum of War. There was only a little bit left to go before they would collide, but In-gong was busy thinking.

‘The power of War.’

It was one of the reasons why Vandal’s army had been defeated by the barbarian king.

He had to stop it. The source of the power of War which surrounded the barbarians didn’t come from the barbarian king. In-gong knew that through Conquest.

It was coming from the middle of the barbarian camp. That was the source—a blood red flag.

“Vandal!”

In-gong’s shout was like a thunderbolt. According to what they had pre-arranged, Carack hastily sent a signal, and the command to attack the flagpole was sent to each unit.

Vandal took the lead. He left command of the vanguard to Alita and completely revealed the violence suppressed within him. Although there were only half of the ogre guards left, they still gave a powerful cry.

“Arararararai!”

Finally, the demon king’s army and the barbarians collided. Vandal rushed like an angry chariot and smashed into the barbarians. However, the barbarians didn’t stand still. As Conquest and War clashed, a brutal conflict began.

In-gong watched all of this on the mini-map. Vandal’s mission wasn’t simply to beat the barbarians—it was to open a path.

The battlefield was like a living creature. It was inevitable that changes would occur due to the actions from each side.

Picking up such changes while standing in the middle of the battlefield wasn’t something that anyone could do. It was only for those with animal senses like Vandal or those with the means to understand the whole battlefield.

In-gong wasn’t capable of it, but he had the mini-map. Therefore, he could capture the changes to both sides on the battlefield clearly.

He entered that gap. Capturing the flag of War was the top priority.

“Kaparang!”

In-gong shouted. He jumped down from Maybach, while Caitlin and Kaparang clung to In-gong’s left and right. Hundreds of lycanthropes in beast form followed him.

Instead of rushing with In-gong, Carack raised the flag of light which had been given to him. As a king’s knight, he was able to hold the flag of Conquest.

“You!”

A barbarian rushed toward him.

In-gong knew that face.

‘Paratus!’

Due to the power of War, his body was more robust now than in comparison to when he had been at the auction house.

Paratus headed alone toward In-gong. Instead of avoiding Paratus, In-gong met him head on. He ran straight ahead and shouted,

“Paratus!”

At the clear call, Paratus’ movements became even fiercer. There was a look of delight on his face.

The distance narrowed, and Paratus pulled back his fist.

At that moment, In-gong opened his inventory. He had prepared it in advance, so he didn’t need to look at the inventory to pull out what he wanted.

The Dragon King’s Golden Helmet—

It was a symbol for the barbarians.

Paratus, who was concentrating on In-gong, moved his gaze instantly to the Dragon

King's Golden Helmet that was thrown. Especially since Paratus had missed the golden helmet when it had been right in front of him—this time, he didn't just follow with his eyes but also stretched out a hand.

Thus, a gap was created.

Dark blue smoke exploded. In-gong used Blink and struck Paratus. His palm pressed against Paratus' abdomen and used Arang with the aura of Divine Sura Authority, the technique that destroyed the enemy's aura internally!

'Arang!'

The white aura dug into Paratus' body. His hardened shell was useless. Paratus was thrown back while coughing blood, and In-gong took a deep breath. Instead of following, he pulled back the Dragon King's Golden Helmet which was connected to his left arm with a thin string. Caitlin passed by In-gong. She moved with In-gong and proceeded with a joint attack on Paratus.

Clearly, Paratus was strong. He was able to withstand In-gong and Caitlin's pincer attack as though it was a normal battle. However, he had been injured from the beginning, so it was like he'd been hit by a very strong blow.

"Kuha!"

Paratus shouted loudly and struggled. A group of barbarians ran out to save him.

Caitlin remained calm. Instead of sticking to Paratus, she maintained a distance. This wasn't a place where there could be a long showdown of skills but a battlefield where hundreds or thousands of enemies and allies fought together.

Kaparang and the lycanthropes collided with the barbarians. It was filled with blood and death.

In-gong looked at the mini-map once again, and he conveyed his intention to Caitlin through the Moonlight Core. Caitlin's response came back, and he prepared something else.

'Black Specter!'



Night Watch's super special move was activated. There were sounds of hundreds of flying creatures flapping their wings as a black smoke spread far and wide.

However, it was different from before. The smoke didn't spread in a circle. It moved in front of In-gong, and its length was almost 100 meters. Additionally, one more thing happened. The place where the black smoke reappeared was different. It wasn't at the place where In-gong had invoked Black Specter. Instead, it was at the other end of where the black smoke had extended.

In-gong had crossed more than 100 meters, and the barbarians couldn't respond right away to In-gong who had suddenly appeared in their midst.

In-gong sprang up from the ground and used Blink once again. The dark blue smoke appeared before the red flag which contained the power of War.

At the same time, White Eagle and Black Eagle flew. The complex trajectory of light pushed back the barbarians who were around In-gong. Then In-gong reached out and grabbed the red flag.

He felt the power of War. It was red and very intense; the power was like a flame.

The red-haired woman wearing red armour flashed into his head—In-gong knew who she was.

'War.'

It was the only thing he could call her. She was an existence that stood shoulder to shoulder with Conquest, Death and Famine.

She smiled. Rather than showing a violent affection like Famine or an overwhelming feeling like Death, War had an alluring smile on her face.

'Conquest.'

The white woman's voice was heard. Her voice was different from how it usually sounded.

After hearing the voice, the red woman laughed loudly, and the power of War rose like flames.

However, In-gong's white light suppressed the red flames. Thanks to Conquest, the power of War was suppressed and destroyed.

The red woman laughed as the power of War was scattered. Then In-gong raised his head and looked at reality. The flagpole containing the power of War was crushed, and the aura of War, which had spread throughout the battlefield, was now scattered.

'Master!'

Despite accomplishing the goal, Green Wind cried out urgently. In-gong raised his gaze reflexively. Although the flagpole had been destroyed, he could still feel the mighty strength of War, and it was rushing toward In-gong from a distance.

"Ku-pa-ha!"

A huge roar shook the battlefield, like a burning meteor radiating red energy.

Barbarian King Karatus...

He leapt from the walls and crossed the sky. Like a lightning bolt, he aimed for In-gong's head.

# Chapter 128

## Dragon Heart #2

His body reacted before he could think. The moment the barbarian king was about to hit him, In-gong used Wind Style to retreat. It was truly a narrow escape. The place where In-gong had just been standing was struck by the barbarian king's mace, and the earth was split apart. It shook from the power, and some of the barbarians in the area fell to the ground.

It wasn't a special blow, nor was it the technique that smashed the gate. This was just a simple attack.

Yet it transcended common sense.

The barbarian king lifted his head as he raised his mace. In-gong was only two to three meters away.

"Good."

The barbarian king spoke in a rough but excited voice.

He used Body Hardening as a rigid shell wrapped around his whole body. Its quality was completely different from Paratus', and although the sizes were similar, In-gong couldn't think of them as the same. This time, it was like facing a mountain.

The barbarian king had the power of War. Unlike the other barbarians, the red aura was burning like a flame.

In-gong knew instinctively...

The barbarian king wasn't a War Knight. However, he was strong. The power of War was really enormous.

It was like facing the man with the spear at Thunderdoom Fortress. That man came to mind. Maybe the barbarian king was a similar existence.

‘Apostle of War.’

Those words emerged, and the white woman’s voice was also heard.

In-gong understood. It was the War Knight that had given the barbarian king the power of War. This meant that the one behind the barbarian king was not the Death Knight but the War Knight.

He had granted the power and the flag.

In-gong finished organizing his thoughts and focused on the barbarian king before him.

In Knight Saga, the barbarian king had a strength comparable to that of an advanced general. Moreover, he now had the power of War. He was sure to be much stronger than the barbarian king in Knight Saga.

Fighting him now wasn’t a good idea. It was the middle of enemy territory. At the very least, he should lure the barbarian king back to his camp where allies could fight together.

In-gong came to the conclusion quickly and used Wind Style again. He was surrounded by barbarians, so it wasn’t possible to retreat with Wind Style alone. However, he was only aiming for a small gap. Once the distance increased from two to three meters to five or six metres, In-gong used his last Blink.

A blue smoke exploded. In-gong was aiming for a place which was diagonal to the starting location. The moment was instantaneous. Then something collided with the blue smoke.

In-gong screamed. The moment he had reappeared, the barbarian king’s mace slammed into him. It tore through the air!

This was a shallow attack.

The barbarian king didn’t speak, but In-gong seemed to hear the voice of the barbarian king in his ear.

The moment when In-gong used Blink, the barbarian king had raised his head and looked at the air. He had moved before the blue smoke had even disappeared.

There were two reasons for this.

One, the barbarian king knew about In-gong's flying and blinking ability. He hadn't seen it on the battlefield, but he had heard about it from Paratus and the other barbarians.

Blink's strength was that In-gong changed locations instantly. Moreover, the location where he appeared wasn't specified, so the enemies were helpless. However, was it really like that? Was there truly no specific location as to where he would appear?

When someone's life was at risk, the use of Blink was likely to be straightforward.

The barbarian king had read the intention to withdraw in In-gong's eyes. In fact, In-gong had used elusive footwork to step backwards like the wind.

If he was using Blink in that situation, he had to step back. In-gong needed to be as far as possible without any enemies.

Then that meant the trajectory was calculated. By taking a diagonal step backward, it was obvious he would go in a straight line from there.

The other thing was the power of War.

The barbarian king, who held the power of War, didn't miss the power of Conquest which had been used in the beginning. The barbarian king could feel the power of Conquest.

He read the direction and trajectory, then he determined the distance through feeling.

It was about a dozen meters. Obviously, that wasn't a close distance. However, as soon as Blink was triggered, he had been able to narrow the distance. He wielded Skull Crusher the moment In-gong appeared in the air.

The barbarian king couldn't catch up completely, but this distance... it was just enough to hit In-gong.

Kwang!

There was a tremendous roar as the atmosphere shook.

Shortly before the attack hit, In-gong's aura had exploded. That explosion pushed In-gong and also affected the trajectory of Skull Crusher. Affecting both the target and attacker, the explosion reduced the strength of the hit.

However, that was it. The attack was still enough for what the barbarian king had intended.

The barbarian king's power was beyond imagination. In-gong flew more than a dozen meters and slammed into the ground.

For a moment, he couldn't breathe. He couldn't distinguish between right and left, as well as front and back. There was no feeling in both arms, and there was no strength in his legs.

"Ku-pa-ha!"

The barbarian king shouted. He was already racing toward In-gong, and the distance narrowed in an instant.

Kwang!

The barbarian king's second attack clashed with White Eagle. The green force field, strengthened by Black Eagle, shook roughly. Despite being far away, White Eagle had moved to In-gong's position and prevented the second attack. However, it was unable to withstand the strength of the attack and was pushed back.

The barbarian king laughed out loud, and Green Wind screamed In-gong's name.

Kwang!

It was the third attack. This time, White Eagle blocked it again. Due to the fact that it was coming from a diagonal direction, White Eagle was pushed diagonally and into the ground.

The barbarian king raised Skull Crusher once again. However, there was a crack in

Green Wind's force field. In-gong gritted his teeth and used Dragon Style as he raised his head.

The fourth attack—

Right before it struck, In-gong reached out for White Eagle with his white aura shining brilliantly!

'Absolute Area!'

White Eagle's super special move—it controlled all attacks within a certain range of White Eagle.

The moment Skull Crusher hit White Eagle, the barbarian king's arm was bent at an unusual angle. It didn't stop there as even the barbarian king's body flew backwards.

'Master!'

Green Wind shouted, but In-gong couldn't be pleased. Absolute Area wasn't a simple technique. It was a super special move which required a huge amount of aura and mental power. Yet he had used it to prevent an ordinary attack.

In-gong felt lightheaded. Blood poured from his body due to the backflow of aura.

This was the worst situation. His legs still had no power, and his hand which held onto White Eagle was trembling.

It was just like how Paratus had been. Due to the unexpected blow, he had received an enormous injury.

The barbarian king, who had been thrown back, landed on the ground. He glanced at his twisted right arm and laughed loudly. With one hand holding Skull Crusher, he readjusted the bones in his right arm.

Indeed, the barbarian king was a monster. When just looking at strength alone, he was stronger than Vandal who boasted the highest power in the demon king's army.

He stared at In-gong, then he diverted his attention away from In-gong for a moment.

“Shutra!”

Caitlin’s voice—she was approaching, and the quad-core was activated.

She was racing through the barbarians with Kaparang and the lycanthropes. Paratus and his followers didn’t know what had happened. Maybe it was a reckless rush that left them behind.

The barbarian king just laughed. Then Caitlin arrived in front of him. Her angry aura exploded as she rushed toward the barbarian king. Kaparang and the lycanthropes were no different.

A battle broke out.

With one swing of Skull Crusher, three lycanthropes collapsed to the ground. The barbarians, who were watching the barbarian king’s battle, put pressure on the lycanthropes from all sides.

The fact that Caitlin and the lycanthropes were in the middle of the battlefield hadn’t changed. Vandal was far away, and the remaining troops were fighting the barbarians, so they couldn’t get there. The only ones there were the lycanthropes.

In-gong coughed up blood again. The sudden activation of the quad-core had a negative impact on him.

However, In-gong didn’t stop the quad-core as Caitlin’s durability was weaker than In-gong’s. Caitlin could lose her life from just one of the barbarian king’s blows. So, In-gong couldn’t reduce her combat capabilities.

‘Master, Master!’

In-gong heard Green Wind’s sad voice and took a deep breath. With trembling hands, he then pulled out a potion from his inventory and drank it. Meanwhile, the barbarian king’s Skull Crusher took the lives of three lycanthropes.

In-gong continued taking deep breaths, trying to normalize his flow of aura. He could feel Caitlin struggle. She seemed to be dancing on the edge of a blade. The number of lycanthropes, which had hardly been damaged in the repeated battles, decreased rapidly.



In-gong suppressed his impatience. He had to remain calm.

Abandoning Caitlin and the lycanthropes in order to run away wasn't even a choice. He couldn't do that. They had jumped into this fight in order to save In-gong. He had to help them.

However, victory was required.

He had to defeat the barbarian king—break him and destroy the spirit of the barbarians.

Right now, In-gong's body was a broken mess. Furthermore, due to the backward flow, it was hard to reach his aura.

In-gong needed something else—a means to enhance his power, even if it was just a little bit.

His head started working overtime, and several things popped into his head.

Telekinesis, magic power, divine power—

They were all lacking. Although they were secondary powers, they couldn't replace aura yet.

The deaths continued, and Caitlin screamed. The Starlight Core and Moonlight Core shook, causing In-gong to cough blood again.

“Master!”

Green Wind's voice was heard. She appeared in solid form and caught In-gong. Both of her eyes were shining.

Green Wind...

The guardian of Enger Plains. She had been born from the fragment of Watcher Ainkel's soul.

As he looked at her, it was like a lightning bolt struck him.

‘Watcher Ainkel.’

Her dragon heart—

In-gong had taken the fragment. As a result, In-gong had been able to become a dragon humanoid.

However, that was it. The fragment was an essence of an elder dragon, a being said to have the same power as a god, but the power of the dragon heart was only that much.

In-gong activated Dragon Style. He triggered Dragon Blood once again. The dragon genes were activated.

At that moment...

Green Wind touched In-gong’s cheek, and she smiled. Her smile was just like the one when he had talked to Green Wind alone in the temple on Enger Plains.

“I am completely conquered. Rule over me, Conquest Knight.”

Green Wind—Ainkel whispered, then she kissed In-gong’s lips. The last piece of the puzzle fell into place.

Conquest... Make them submit.

Watcher Ainkel’s strength—

He hadn’t absorbed it, and the fragments of power were scattered around in In-gong’s body.

Green Wind became a wind which wound around In-gong. He focused inwardly on the hidden powers in Dragon Style and Dragon Blood—the fragments of power in his dragon genes.

It was created.

He opened his eyes.

It was a third aura heart. This was a mighty magic power that only a dragon had...

Also known as a dragon heart!

The Moonlight Core was strong, and aura also sprang out from the gandharva aura heart which In-gong had originally.

The third aura heart—the dragon heart supplemented all the power of his dragon style, and In-gong's magic power started to emit a dragon's power.

[You have fully conquered Watcher Ainkel's power.]

[A dragon heart has formed in your body.]

[The level of Dragon Humanoid has risen.]

[The level of Magic Power Control has risen.]

[The level of Magic Power Control has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

The woman's voice rang in In-gong's ears. All his injuries were restored as the white light that celebrated his achievement shone.

And in that light, the power of Conquest stopped. All those fighting against it looked at In-gong.

In-gong raised his head. Time had passed. The bodies of the lycanthropes were scattered all around, and he saw the bloody back of Caitlin, who seemed to be on the verge of collapsing.

In-gong's gaze moved away from her, and he glared at the barbarian king who was beyond Caitlin. He declared without hiding his anger,

"Penta-core."

Five aura hearts.

A pure white aura emerged from the dragon heart in the center.

# Chapter 129

## Dragon Heart #3

The Moonlight Core and Starlight Core continued to be connected.

In-gong and Caitlin influenced each other. In-gong had three aura hearts, while Caitlin had two. The dragon style which came from the dragon heart headed toward Caitlin. The aura which was exchanged through the Moonlight Core and Starlight Core painted their auras with both colours.

The quad-core was a great force, but the penta-core was more than that. It wasn't simply the addition of one aura heart.

The aura flow was bigger and stronger, and the aura recovery rate was faster as well. In a short time, Caitlin's body, which had consumed an enormous amount of aura, filled with a new aura.

In-gong didn't capture all the aura. Instead of controlling the enormous power of the penta-core, he released it. The white aura emerged from In-gong's body like fire, and the dark blue aura twisted with the white.

The aura's density was different. It wasn't a mild light. For a moment, In-gong seemed like the sun.

Aura was life force. Everyone had it, so everyone could feel the power. It was a force which could be understood better than any other.

The lycanthropes were astounded, and the barbarians trembled in fear.

However, the barbarian king smiled, and he laughed loudly.

"Aura! It is the same as War!"

It was meaningless to everyone except for In-gong, but it didn't matter.

The barbarian increased the power of his Body Hardening one step further. His body became redder, stronger and harder.

The aura of War surrounded the barbarian king, and In-gong stared straight at him. The barbarian king was inherently strong. In-gong hadn't struggled against Gerard just because of the power of Famine, but Gerard himself was powerful as well.

So, it wasn't just the power of War—In-gong needed to concentrate on the barbarian king himself.

Barbarian King Karatus...

A person who was more incredible than Vandal. When it came to just the power of the body, he was superior to any enemies In-gong had faced so far. From the beginning, it had been all about power. He couldn't drag this out too long.

In-gong took a step forward. While the barbarians and lycanthropes were still in shock, he triggered Wind Style. There was no noise. There were no signs. The moment that massive amount of aura was released, In-gong's body appeared beside the barbarian king.

The barbarian king hadn't seen In-gong move, but he was a natural warrior and wielded Skull Crusher instinctively.

In-gong saw it. Naturally, he reached out his left hand and triggered Great Mountain.

The pushing force collided with Skull Crusher. The brutal force tried to destroy Great Mountain, but it didn't work. Great Mountain diverted Skull Crusher's trajectory. As it struck the ground, In-gong took one step and aimed for the barbarian king.

The barbarian king once again instinctively tried to defend. He strengthened his front parts, such as his chest and abdomen, through Body Hardening. The change occurred in the blink of an eye, almost creating a fortress in the front of the body.

However, In-gong didn't pay attention to it. He knew the barbarian king would do this. Instead of using a fist, he stretched out his palm. The barbarian king felt something ominous and opened his eyes, but it was already too late. In-gong's palm just touched the abdomen of the barbarian king.

A technique of Divine Sura Authority was triggered.

It was an attack that destroyed the enemy's aura from within!

“Arang!”

A rough aura, like an angry wolf, dug inside the barbarian king. The hard, external shell was no use. The tremendous aura devastated the barbarian king's insides. His life force was damaged.

Cough!

The barbarian king coughed up blood, and his red flesh returned to its normal state. The blow was so severe that Body Hardening was turned off.

However, he wasn't thrown back like Paratus had been. The barbarian king swallowed down the pain and pushed strength through his entire body. It was enough to make In-gong admire his patience and durability.

In-gong didn't panic. He hadn't thought the barbarian king would fall with just this, so he pulled back his palm and rotated his body. The barbarian king had been able to withstand Arang, but this strong kick to his abdomen pushed him back.

Kwakakakakang!

At the same time, a huge amount of aura spread. It was a sense of pushing, rather than destruction. The barbarian was thrown back into the sky and flew 20 meters. He would have flown much further if he hadn't encountered so many barbarian warriors.

The barbarian king slammed into the ground. Instead of pursuing the barbarian king, In-gong chose to take some time to breathe.

It seemed like ages, but only a few dozen seconds had passed in reality. In-gong looked at the mini-map. Vandal was moving toward In-gong's side with his troops. In the rear, Takar's troops were fighting the barbarians, and the lycanthropes were still surrounded by barbarians.

In-gong stretched out his hand. He recovered the king's flag from Carack and penetrated it into the ground, spreading the power of Conquest. A ray of light shot up

into the sky. As Conquest spread like a shockwave, the lycanthropes were covered with the white energy.

After confirming In-gong's position through the light, the movements of Vandal and other high ranking members became more active. Additionally, the lycanthropes regained the strength to fight.

Caitlin approached In-gong. She hadn't adapted to the penta-core yet. It was like a flooding river of aura, so it was hard to control it. However, she was a genius, and it wasn't long before she bound back the floor of aura.

In-gong watched the barbarian king while asking Caitlin,

"Are you okay?"

"Yes, it isn't my blood."

Despite the pain, Caitlin spoke in a bright voice to reassure In-gong. She was always like this.

In-gong glanced at Caitlin and smiled. He adjusted the penta-core to alleviate some of the burden on Caitlin, then he breathed out and formed a fist.

"He's coming."

In-gong declared. The barbarian king was standing up. He was indeed strong. He wasn't an opponent who could be defeated with just a few surprise attacks.

However, In-gong wasn't afraid, and it wasn't just because of the penta-core.

Then Caitlin grabbed In-gong's hand. The connection between them was strengthened for a while, and the white aura and dark blue aura mixed together.

"Go."

Caitlin said, and In-gong nodded. The two people let go of their hands as the barbarian king moved. Skull Crusher was giving off a formidable aura. The barbarian king was changing the way he fought.



In-gong ran toward the barbarian king, and Caitlin followed him. The barbarian king roared loudly.

“Ku-pa-ha!”

Skull Crusher moved through the air. A huge outpour of power rushed towards In-gong and Caitlin.

So far, the barbarian king had only used simple strikes. He hadn’t used wide area attacks like this shockwave. The reason was simple—there were allies on the battlefield. They would also be killed by the wide area attack.

However, he couldn’t afford to worry about that in a situation like this. The barbarian king was going all out.

Instead of jumping over the wave, In-gong and Caitlin extended their fists simultaneously. Aura radiated out and broke the shockwave. It was an ignorant method in order to protect the lycanthropes behind them.

The white and blue aura shattered the red, and the barbarian king moved through that gap. He aimed a strong blow at both In-gong and Caitlin.

Caitlin stepped back hurriedly, and In-gong used Wind Style to appear behind the barbarian king.

Thanks to the penta-core, the power of his aura had increased, but his durability hadn’t. He couldn’t face the barbarian king directly since one blow could cost him his life.

Between In-gong and Caitlin, the barbarian king chased Caitlin. The reason was simple—Caitlin was closer to the lycanthropes.

The barbarian king poured out attacks. Every time Skull Crusher was swung, there was a shockwave explosion. They swallowed up the lycanthropes who had resumed fighting the barbarians.

The lycanthropes tried to get away from the barbarian king, but it wasn’t easy because the barbarians were pushing the lycanthropes. Despite knowing they would be caught up in the shockwaves, the barbarians didn’t stop.

The barbarian king swung Skull Crusher again. Caitlin howled and rushed toward the barbarian king. At the same time, In-gong struck from the rear.

The roars continued in succession, and the earth shook a few times. The white, blue and red auras collided several times, causing explosions.

It was a bizarre fight. Despite all the attacks, none of them reached the target. The barbarian king repeated the quick and aggressive attacks. Since In-gong and Caitlin were focused on evasion, attack was indeed the best defense.

The barbarian king's attacks became faster, and In-gong and Caitlin had to focus more on evasion.

This couldn't continue. Unlike In-gong, Caitlin hadn't received the bonus from levelling up, so she was quite tired. If this became a prolonged fight, Caitlin wouldn't be able to escape from the barbarian king's strikes.

In-gong had to shake the situation. First, Caitlin had to be determined.

Caitlin plunged through Skull Crusher's trajectory. She moved through Skull Crusher and aimed her fist.

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that all the power in Caitlin's body was used in the blow, but the attack power didn't reach its target. The barbarian king defended against it with all his strength. He staggered and aimed his left fist at Caitlin, who was up in the air. Confronted with the inevitable blow, Caitlin's eyes closed.

Kwang!

There was a loud clamor. However, it wasn't the sound of flesh and bones breaking.

It was White Eagle. White Eagle had blocked the barbarian king's fist with exquisite timing. Although Caitlin was pushed back more than a dozen meters, her life was saved.

This also created a chance for In-gong, and he rushed toward the barbarian king whose attack stance had collapsed. Once again, In-gong aimed Arang at the barbarian king's abdomen.

However, unlike earlier, the reaction was different this time. The aura which was about to pour in was blocked by the power of War. The attack didn't result in a fatal wound.

Despite the spilled blood, the barbarian king smiled. He widened the distance with In-gong and wielded Skull Crusher.

In-gong didn't use Wind Style. Instead of increasing the distance, he yelled,

"Green Wind!"

It was the King's Call!

Green Wind responded. She crossed through space and appeared instantly before In-gong. A green force field expanded out and blocked Skull Crusher!

Kwang!

There was a loud roar as White Eagle was pushed against somewhat. However, it didn't break, and White Eagle defended from above In-gong's head.

In-gong pulled back a fist, breaking the flow of aura himself. As blood flowed from between his lips, he concentrated his aura on Earth Quaker—

The destruction of the Great Enkidu!

'True Destruction!'

In-gong slammed his fist into the barbarian king's belly, and the power of destruction swallowed up the barbarian king.

The red energy of War peeled off instantly as cracks spread and the hard shell was destroyed. The barbarian king coughed up blood. His shell broke, revealing a bleeding wound. The firmly grasped Skull Crusher was dropped to the ground.

However, it was up to there. In-gong had used True Destruction hastily, and it was lacking.

In-gong coughed up blood as well. The barbarian king howled like a beast and swung

his right arm. As it pushed against White Eagle, the barbarian king moved his left fist. It was a blow for taking In-gong down instantly.

“Shutra!”

Caitlin shouted.

In-gong raised his head and squeezed out his remaining strength. He moved his feet to avoid the barbarian king’s attack, then he reached out and grabbed the Skull Crusher which the barbarian king had dropped.

The barbarian king’s weapon...

Another thing which had been left behind by the Dragon King.

In-gong conquered it—dominated it. He took it for himself.

Thus, Skull Crush’s super special move was able to be activated—the powerful blow that had destroyed Takar’s gate!

It was a surprise that shook the heavens and the earth!

The white light from Skull Crusher struck the barbarian king.

# Chapter 130

## Dragon Heart #4

There was a dazzling light and loud sound which disturbed the eyes and ears of those who were watching.

In-gong swallowed back his pain. His two arms seemed broken. However, In-gong didn't drop Skull Crusher. He glanced before him while coughing blood.

The barbarian king was standing, and he was reaching for In-gong. However, that hand didn't reach him. The upper half of the barbarian king and his abdomen were gone. His entire shell was broken, exposing his insides. It was gory. The barbarian king's knees were broken. The power of War couldn't be found anymore. The hand stretching out toward In-gong fell to the ground, and both of the barbarian king's eyes lost their light.

In-gong let out a long sigh. He let go of Skull Crusher and turned off the penta-core. Then letters of light rose up in succession.

[Boss: Barbarian King Karatus has been defeated.]

[The title of 'King Slayer' has risen from low to intermediate level.]

[Title: Evian's Conqueror has been acquired.]

[Strength and durability have increased after the fight against the barbarian king.]

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

He gained three consecutive levels. This was the first time his level had risen so much

since defeating the zombie dragon at Thunderdoom Fortress.

As always, the pure white light wound around In-gong. His flesh, which had been driven to the extremes during the fight with the barbarian king, recovered instantly, and his exhausted aura was once again filled.

In-gong exhaled. He could feel all the gazes around him. There was a mixture of respect, wonder and fear. Under all the gazes, In-gong raised Skull Crusher up high. Then the entire battlefield let go of the breaths they were holding. The lycanthropes roared loudly:

“The barbarian king was killed!”

“9th Prince has defeated the barbarian king!”

“The barbarian king has been knocked down!”

The cry spread like a wave throughout the whole battlefield, and the barbarians' morale was broken.

In-gong put Skull Crusher into his inventory. Although his knees were broken, the barbarian king had died standing up. The aftermath of the battle had ruined the area around In-gong and the barbarian king, which caused the lycanthropes and barbarians to maintain a wide distance from him. It wasn't an exaggeration to call it a blank space on the battlefield.

In-gong approached Caitlin, who looked at In-gong with a mixture of joy and absurdity. The joy was naturally about the victory, while the absurdity was due to In-gong's energetic appearance despite it being right after the battle.

In-gong stretched out his hand to Caitlin and used a recovery spell on her. The lycanthropes surrounded In-gong and Caitlin, while some of the barbarians moved to retrieve the barbarian king's body.

Instead of attacking the barbarians, In-gong looked at the mini-map.

The whole battlefield had transformed. Additionally, the death of the barbarian king had caused a great stir.

Takar's defenders, who had been watching In-gong's and the barbarian king's fight from the high wall, started moving. They poured out from the castle and attacked the rear of the barbarians.

The barbarians scattered. After losing their most powerful force, the barbarian king, the barbarians lost their focal point. After the death of the barbarian king, some started to escape, while others pierced through the battlefield like they wanted to double check the death with their own eyes. However, the battle continued on as those on both sides fought the enemies in front of them.

Vandal and his guards were heading straight to In-gong. At the same time, there were also barbarians rushing there.

They were Paratus and his men.

In-gong drank some recovery potions and called to Kaparang. He entrusted Caitlin to Kaparang and climbed aboard White Eagle.

A strong wind blew. In-gong flew as high as he could and glanced at the entire battlefield. Then Paratus found In-gong and roared.

Following the losses of both the barbarian king and then Paratus, the barbarians no longer had the will to fight, and almost all of the barbarians started to flee.

General Vandal pursued the barbarians and smashed into them. They wouldn't be able to dream of crossing the limit line for a while.

The victorious demon king's army stretched out before Takar and rested. Takar's ruler, Vulcanus, didn't like the demon king's army staying in front of Takar, but he wasn't foolish enough to express such feelings.

Takar had received relatively minor damage. The gate had been destroyed, but the barbarians couldn't enter deep into the city. Some of the areas had suffered quite a bit of damage, but they were in the lawless areas, and Takar itself wasn't heavily affected.

Felicia used the transportation formation near Takar to report the victory. She didn't forget to put in the first line of the report that In-gong was the one who killed the

barbarian king.

Then night fell.

It was a night of victory.

Several large fires were ignited in the camp of the demon king's army. The flames were so big and bright that they seemed like they would drive away the night.

Everyone ate meat and drank alcohol, enjoying the fact that they had survived and won.

However, there were many who had died. The lycanthropes lost more than a dozen people. In the first place, there had been only 200 of them, so the absences were big.

The night of victory was for both the living and the dead. The fires were a blessing to the living and a light of remembrance for the dead.

In-gong, along with Vandal, travelled all over the camp and encouraged the troops. Everyone knew of In-gong's actions, so he was greeted with enthusiastic cheers everywhere he visited. The soldiers gazed at him with eyes full of respect and worship.

The night passed like this.

Vandal chuckled and looked down at In-gong. He then tapped In-gong's back with his fingers and asked,

"Prince, are you okay?"

"I'm dying."

In-gong had to drink a glass of alcohol at every place he visited, so he had drunk over a dozen cups. His fatigue was more due to the alcohol than the combat.

'That reminds me, this is my first drink.'

He had never drunk any alcohol before coming here, so it truly was his first drink.



‘The first time is important.’

He thought he would be sitting next to Felicia and drinking it elegantly, but the reality was different. He didn’t know how much he had drunk nor had he tasted the alcohol.

“It is fortunate that you are still drinking. It is a hero’s style.”

Vandal laughed and tapped on In-gong’s back again. In-gong frowned but nodded.

‘Yes, this is a real benefit.’

His durability and mental power were significant, so he would probably be fine even if he drank a whole keg of alcohol.

“You should go back and rest, Prince. You had a great day today.”

Vandal said with an extended finger. His face, which was red from the alcohol, was filled with a bright smile.

In-gong laughed with pleasure and caught Vandal’s finger. As always, they shook it like a handshake, then Vandal spoke again,

“Prince.”

“Huh?”

“I have a request.”

Vandal was still smiling. Both of Vandal’s eyes were filled with affection, but In-gong realized the mood had changed. He had a vague idea of what Vandal was going to say.

In-gong let go of Vandal’s finger. Vandal bowed to In-gong and took a deep breath, then he stared straight at In-gong and declared,

“Five days later, both Prince and I will have washed away our fatigue from the battle. I want to fight with Prince then.”

Vandal didn’t want to take In-gong’s life.

Nor was it due to resentment or anger at In-gong.

It was due to a competitive spirit and some aspirations.

In-gong understood. It had been the same in Knight Saga— No, Knight Saga was different.

In Knight Saga, Zephyr had always been the one who offered first.

Once Nayatra found the conditions for recruiting Vandal, Zephyr would asked for a fight first. If Nayatra didn't get this information, then Vandal would stipulate a fight when Zephyr asked him to become a subordinate.

Vandal never spoke first. He never sought a fight in order to test his lord.

However, that Vandal was now asking for a fight. He wanted to compete with In-gong.

In-gong nodded, eager to respond to Vandal's pure desire.

"Yes, let's fight. Five days later, when we are in the best condition."

Those around In-gong and Vandal were excited and cheered enthusiastically. They were the surviving ogre guards and Carack.

Vandal took a deep breath and spoke with a slightly embarrassed expression.

"It might be too soon, but it was a great fortune that I got to meet Prince. I am thankful that I was able to fight with Prince on this land."

"It is my pleasure."

He couldn't say that he came to Evian in order to meet Vandal.

Instead of shaking hands once more, In-gong and Vandal bumped fists lightly. It was a natural exchange between men.

Vandal headed back to the excited ogre guards. In-gong gazed at Vandal's back for a moment, then he returned to his quarters. Carack caught up to In-gong.

“Prince, isn’t this big?”

“It is something I have to do.”

In-gong couldn’t guarantee a win. This could be a struggle for life or death. Nevertheless, he wasn’t afraid. It was because this was Vandal, and Vandal had a pure competitive spirit.

“You are truly a warrior.”

Carack spoke with moist eyes, like In-gong was really brave, and In-gong made a disgusted expression at Carack before entering his tent.

The tent, which was filled with animal leather, was quiet. He had been sleeping with Caitlin for several days for the purpose of recovery, but the battle was over now. When he was at the drinking party, Caitlin had gone to sleep in her own tent with Seira.

“6th Princess left a letter.

Carack picked up a piece of paper from the floor and gave it to In-gong. She was already quite drunk, so the usually graceful writing was filled with random scribbles.

‘Did you drink the alcohol I gave you? That is forbidden today. Hihi. Shutra, you fool.’

In-gong was reminded of the Felicia he had seen when he was roaming around. She had been rejoicing with the other dark elves.

In-gong wasn’t sure how Felicia would feel about him drinking without her, but he couldn’t help laughing. Today was a fun day. It was good that Felicia could relax.

“I want to see her in that state in the future.”

Carack said, and In-gong nodded. Then Carack helped him prepare for bed.

‘Tired.’

In-gong was really tired. He would probably fall asleep as soon as he laid down. However, In-gong took something out of the inventory right before going to sleep. It

was the pillow Caitlin had given him as a gift.

The Lucid Dream Pillow...

It was limited to 10 times, but it was a pillow that allowed the owner to dream what they wanted.

In-gong touched the surface of the soft pillow briefly. He had already decided what to dream:

A fight with the barbarian king. So far, the barbarian king had the highest strength and defense among any enemy In-gong had faced. The barbarian king had understood Blink and struck. He had defeated the second Arang, and although it was just an improvised one, he had endured True Destruction.

In-gong wanted to fight him again. It was clear that fighting him would lead In-gong to a higher place, so it would be good training prior to his fight with Vandal.

‘I will fight at night.’

Regardless of whether he won or lost, he would be able to fight many times in his dreams.

‘Tomorrow, let’s fight.’

His fatigue was too much today.

In-gong placed the pillow beside him. Carack saw the pillow and asked him,

“Prince.”

“Huh?”

“The number on the pillow has fallen from 10 to nine. When did you use it?”

The sharp question made In-gong flinch, and Carack’s eyes narrowed.

“Prince, was it a big dream? A good, big dream?”

In-gong shifted his gaze away from Carack, and a large smile appeared on Carack's face. Just then, Green Wind appeared behind Carack. She then hugged In-gong's neck and asked,

"Master, did you dream about me?"

In-gong stayed silent. He continued to stay silent until he fell asleep.

The news of In-gong's victory was conveyed to the Demon King's Palace...

And the news spread to all areas of the Demon World. Some were happy, while some felt impatient, and others were jealous.

In a place far away, where news from the Demon King's Palace couldn't be heard, there was a man who perceived In-gong's victory.

The Death Knight...

The one who had been longing for the end of the world for a thousand years.

He raised his head and listened to the voice of death.

# Chapter 131

## Cross

The requirements for becoming demon king could be divided into three parts.

The first was having high merits. Merits were the basis of everything. The higher the merit level, the stronger the support from the Demon King's Palace would be, and there would be more obtainable things. It was also the basis of the competition between the children of the demon king. So, no matter how much better they were in other aspects, they could still lag behind in this competition.

The second was strength. The strength of the demon king was just as important as merits in the Demon World. It was the royal children's strength that was looked at when the Merits Department assigned missions. If their strength didn't reach a certain level, they could only be assigned a few missions. Moreover, it was natural, but they couldn't become the demon king unless they were strong in the first place. The strongest royal child would become the demon king.

The third part was networking. It was important to become friendly with key figures of the Demon King's Palace, such as the captains, as well as having alliances with outside forces or securing competent subordinates. These connections were just as necessary as merits and strength. There were many advantages to improving the reputation of a royal child.

There were many cases where the other party would inform them of information beforehand. Of course, depending on the type of fame, there could be more enemies than allies.

The reason why social connections were important was based on the ideal of the strong in the Demon World. Even if the demon king was strong, the people wouldn't trust the strength of the heir if it was below a certain level.

The power of their forces, high merits, reputation and a solid network of people inside and outside the Demon King's Palace...

These were the things necessary in order to become the demon king.

“Prince. Prince, get up. It is already morning. The sun has risen a long time ago.”

A rough hand shook his shoulder.

As expected, In-gong opened his eyes to see Carack’s face. Carack helped the sleepy In-gong raise his body and handed him a cup of green liquid.

“Come on, drink this. It is a drink for your hangover.”

In-gong didn’t have the energy to resist, so he drank it, but the taste was truly terrible. Still, the drink had an effect as his mind cleared.

Carack laughed and handed him a cup of water. The clear, cold water was great.

“Carack, you seem fine.”

After clearing his mind, In-gong spoke while pressing a hand against his temple. Carack laughed again and hit his chest.

“Huhu, this is an alcoholic’s body. I continued drinking even after Prince slept, but I am still fine.”

The green colour of the orc skin made it difficult for In-gong to tell if there truly was no hangover. Therefore, In-gong decided to just nod.

“Yes, well done, well done.”

‘What’s an alcoholic’s body? Does he bathe in alcohol?’

After picturing the futile delusion, In-gong closed his eyes again. Then Carack shook In-gong’s shoulder once more.

“Prince, I truly waited until the latest possible moment before I woke you. There isn’t much time left until the meeting.”

They had achieved a great victory in the battle against the barbarians, but that wasn't the end of it. Just like the case where they had defeated the Red Lightning tribe, there was still work to do. They had to restore the bases they had abandoned as well as secure the fourth base that might still contain barbarians.

The person responsible for this battle was In-gong, so all the clean-up was also In-gong's responsibility. He couldn't take a backseat and watch.

"Come on, get up. There really isn't a lot of time. You need to eat a big meal in the morning."

"I don't think... Nayatra?"

In-gong raised his head before anyone entered. It was because Nayatra had appeared on the mini-map, which he had opened through habit.

As In-gong spoke, Nayatra entered the tent with both hands holding a large tray of food.

"Your Highness, breakfast is served."

Nayatra said gracefully while keeping her eyes down. As In-gong stared at her with a blank face, she put the tray down in front of him.

"Breakfast is the start of the day. You have to eat. It is ridiculous if you don't."

There was a feeling of affection which couldn't be hidden in the calm voice. It was nice but embarrassing. Was she doing this to gain favour with In-gong?

In-gong stared at Nayatra before turning his gaze toward the tray.

There was the smell of hot soup and freshly made bread. Some of the dishes were really hot like they had just been made.

"Hoh, is everything homemade?"

Carack moved closer to the tray with a face of admiration. Nayatra stretched out her hand to restrain Carack with sharp eyes.



“This is His Highness’ food. Step aside. As I said before, this food is for His Highness.”

Carack flinched at the cold voice, and there was a tinge of embarrassment on his face.

In-gong felt his appreciation for Nayatra rise as he watched the scene. She was a woman who was cold to Carack. It was indeed fresh.

“Thank you, I will eat it well.”

In-gong smiled and started eating breakfast, while Nayatra’s chill melted as she smiled back. As the two people smiled at each other, Carack had a wounded expression while he watched In-gong.

Some time passed.

After a quick breakfast, In-gong got dressed with the help of Carack and Nayatra. Then he headed to the tent where the meeting would take place. Nayatra wanted to come along, but In-gong’s aide was Carack.

‘Nayatra was always with me in Knight Saga.’

She was both a counselor and escort knight.

“Prince, what is with that look?”

“No, nothing. I was just thinking about a possible personnel adjustment.”

Carack’s eyes asked what he meant, but In-gong just laughed. He didn’t intend to change his aide, but it was quite fun teasing Carack.

In-gong tapped Carack’s shoulder and started moving quicker.

Felicia and Caitlin were already waiting inside the tent with Delia and Seira. Felicia was particularly noteworthy.

“Shutra... Noona wants to die... Divide Noona’s legacy in half with Silvan...”

Felicia lay on top of a big table and spoke in a dying voice. She had drunk so much yesterday that she was now suffering from a huge hangover.

In-gong sat next to Felicia and used a magic spell.

“Recovery.”

It was a powerful status recovery magic. It was slightly strange using it for a hangover, but the effect was clear.

“I can live a little bit now.”

Felicia groaned and raised her upper body. Her complexion was still bad, but she certainly looked better than before.

“Why didn’t you use it on yourself?”

“I can’t use magic because my head hurts too much.”

Felicia replied with a frown and drank the cold water on the table. In-gong turned his head toward Caitlin.

“What about Noona? Is your body okay now?”

“Yes, I am fine.”

Caitlin had gone to sleep right after the battle.

She smiled gently and then asked a question while tilting her head slightly,

“By the way Shutra, what happened yesterday? Your aura suddenly got stronger. It seemed like one more aura heart had grown.”

Caitlin was connected to In-gong through the Moonlight Core and Sunlight Core. Since he had operated the penta-core in the battle with the barbarian king, Caitlin had no choice but to notice the new aura heart.

In-gong looked around at those inside the tent before answering.

Seira was standing behind Caitlin with curiosity, while Delia and Felicia weren’t as curious because they were somewhat ignorant about aura. There was also Carack

standing behind In-gong. As Felicia always said, the air was one body with their master. Therefore, he could tell these six people his secret.

In-gong took a deep breath and said in a calm voice,

“This story is only for the people here. Please keep it a secret.”

The curiosity on their faces became stronger. In-gong laughed inadvertently and started his explanation.

“Shutra is great!”

Caitlin’s eyes widened and shone. It felt like it had been a while since he last heard it.

It wasn’t just Caitlin who felt admiration. Felicia stood up and shouted,

“That’s right, great. No, amazing!”

“That’s right, Master is great and amazing.”

Green Wind appeared behind In-gong and hugged him. The people in the tent weren’t surprised anymore since it was a scene they had seen often.

The fact that In-gong had obtained Watcher Ainkel’s dragon heart on Enger Plains was known to everyone. However, it didn’t stop there, and he had now formed a dragon heart in his body.

In-gong explained that it was possible due to something special about Ainkel’s dragon heart, but they were still filled with admiration.

Caitlin spoke with a bright expression,

“So, that is why your aura suddenly became stronger. It is also why I felt something similar to Baikal orabeoni from Shutra’s aura. Shutra is really amazing.”

Caitlin expressed her innocent admiration. However, instead of replying like normal, Felicia burst out. She looked at In-gong and Caitlin with outraged eyes.

“Oh, my god. Aura becoming stronger is nothing to laugh at. It is truly great. Do you

know what it means to have a dragon heart?”

“Uh, is Prince going to become a big dragon? Will scales form on his body? Or maybe he will grow a tail?”

At Carack’s question, Caitlin’s eyes widened and her gaze shifted down to In-gong’s hips. In-gong looked down as well.

Felicia firmly shook her head.

“It’s not like that. What are you talking about? Why would he develop scales or a tail? Although horns or wings would be cool!”

Her words trailed off at the end.

Felicia covered her face with both hands and lamented,

“Oh my god. Why am I the only magician here? Why?”

“Princess, calm down and explain slowly.”

Delia came forward. It worked as Felicia continued speaking in a somewhat calm voice,

“A dragon heart is the dragon’s power itself. It could be called a dragon’s organ. The dragon heart contains the distinctive power of a dragon.”

“Then Shutra can shoot out dragon breath?”

Caitlin asked when she heard ‘power of a dragon’. Carack’s eyes widened.

“Prince, can you shoot fire from your mouth?”

As all eyes moved towards In-gong’s mouth, In-gong raised his hand to his mouth without even knowing it. The word ‘fire’ popped into his head.

Felicia shook her head at all their reactions. The wildly moving heart seemed to represent Felicia’s spirit.

“No, no. Nothing like that! More important and greater! Shutra, do you know?”

Felicia asked, turning to In-gong. Putting aside the others, her eyes were asking why he didn't know.

In-gong searched through his memories. The information from Knight Saga and the books about the elder dragons came to mind.

What could he do with a dragon heart? Something that only dragons could do.

The answer flashed through his head, and In-gong spoke unconsciously,

“Dragon magic.”

They were powerful words, referring to the unique magic that only dragons could use.

“Yes, that's correct! Shutra has a dragon heart, so he may be able to use dragon magic!”

Felicia cried out with a refreshed face.

However, the rest of the party still had confused expressions. Caitlin and Delia knew about magic, but they didn't have a rich knowledge of it.

Additionally, Carack, who was the most ignorant about magic in the tent, raised his hand.

“Princess, who will teach the dragon magic? Don't you have to learn it from a dragon?”

“Uh, maybe?”

There was little known about dragon magic. Felicia had no knowledge about it other than it was a powerful magic that only a dragon could use.

Carack's eyes narrowed at Felicia's less than confident reply.

“Princess, do you know a dragon?”

“No.”

“Me too.”

Caitlin replied as well, and Felicia calmed down her excitement.

The possibility of learning dragon magic was opened, but there was no way to learn it right away.

“Let’s just calm down. It is enough to know that there is the possibility. We can ask the sword duke or Amita.”

Those two people might know more about dragons.

‘And...’

In-gong could think of someone who knew about dragon magic, but it wasn’t a place he could visit right now.

As soon as the turmoil settled down, Vandal entered the tent, and they discussed future plans.

Although it wasn’t an exaggeration to say Evian was in winter all year around, that was also divided into cold and warm seasons. Right now, the really cold weather was approaching.

As soon as the meeting ended, the group gathered the troops hastily. They had to re-occupy the fifth, sixth and seventh bases and expel the remaining barbarians from the fourth base.

Since there was no reason to visit the fifth, sixth and seventh bases again, In-gong took out all the supplies from his inventory and handed them to the troops of each base. Thanks to that, the movement speed slowed down, but it wasn’t a big problem.

Then night came again.

Thanks to the fireplace, In-gong was able to check the mini-map in the early hours as well as open his inventory. He took out the Lucid Dream Pillow.

‘Now, I will start.’

In-gong took a deep breath and laid his head on the Lucid Dream Pillow, falling asleep instantly.

After a while, a loud voice was heard in In-gong’s ears as he opened his eyes in the dream.

# Chapter 132

## Cross #2

“This is the dream setup stage. Are you sure you want to create a dream?”

Just like every time he levelled up, a woman’s voice was heard off-screen. It was a soft, warm voice, but after experimenting a few times, he came to the conclusion that a personality didn’t exist with it.

It was like the voice of an in-game NPC which repeated predefined words.

‘Well, it is understandable.’

If the voice had a personality, it would be like a woman was peeping into his dream. If there was a peeper, people wouldn’t want to dream.

‘Embarrassment.’

Of course, the voice was only present in the dream, so it couldn’t go and tell others about the dream. However, it was still embarrassing.

‘Yes, embarrassing.’

He didn’t want to show his dream to others. It would be like revealing his secret desires to them.

In-gong calmed himself by taking a deep breath and looked straight ahead. Just like all the classic movies scenes he had seen in the past, the whole world was white. Furthermore, it was a wide space without walls, so there was no distinction between the sky and the earth.

It felt like a blank canvas which hadn’t been touched.

‘Okay, then the background.’



This wasn't actually his first time using the Lucid Dream Pillow.

The first time had been while pursuing the barbarian king from the second base. Another feature of the Lucid Dream Pillow was giving a good night's sleep, so he had used it during the repeated marches.

'I only tried a few settings.'

The Lucid Dream Pillow was comparable to a game with a save slot. So, he set up a new game by leaving the first slot paused and opening a second slot.

"Please imagine the background you want in your mind."

"The guide voice can be activated or deactivated at any time."

The voice was heard in succession. In-gong closed his eyes and concentrated. Due to the nature of dreams, the first thing which came to mind was In-gong's room.

It wasn't his bedroom in his mansion at the Demon King's Palace.

What he pictured was his room before he came to this world—the place where Joo In-gong, not Shutra, stayed. In-gong's room had a bed, a closet and a bookcase. There was no need to retouch anything with his imagination. He was able to see it clearly like it had been taken with a photograph.

However, In-gong's eyes didn't open. He quickly erased the thoughts in his head. If he opened his eyes to see his room, it felt like something in In-gong's mind would collapse. He had to forget those things in order to survive. So, he buried thoughts of the past in order to live in the current present.

In-gong took deep breaths. He emptied his head and thought of a new background, using his imagination to create the dream.

It was now a garden in the Demon King's Palace, but it wasn't exactly the same. It was much wider, and it wasn't just his mansion that surrounded the garden. There was the mansion where Felicia and Silvan stayed as well as Caitlin's and Chris' mansion beside

In-gong's. There was also a blacksmith's forge in the corner where Amita was playing around.

'Amita is in the background.'

In-gong laughed as he glanced up at the sky. The sky... It was the lofty, blue sky that In-gong liked.

It was also possible to control the weather. He made it sunny and warm, but the cold wind made it feel refreshing.

'I felt it last time, but I can understand why there are separate slots.'

Once he started making the settings, there was no limit. It was interesting to play around while setting up the dream.

It wasn't just the background setting.

"The placement of people is the same as setting the background."

"The characters are just figures in the dream. They aren't the actual people. Therefore, both the personality and abilities are created by the owner. Please note this point."

In-gong nodded while listening to the voice. It was impossible to create all the secrets and past histories of the people included in the dream. When he thought about it, In-gong didn't have confidence to create them.

'But still...'

He should at least attempt it once. In-gong closed his eyes and imagined it:

The person who had always been with him since entering this world... A voice which spoke up every time In-gong was in danger.

In-gong opened his eyes. A woman with white hair stood before him. She was wearing white clothes reminiscent of clergy attire and had a gold crown on her head. She had

one red eye and one blue eye. The light in her eyes were friendly but lonely.

This was still the setup stage, so she couldn't speak yet. In-gong closed his eyes again and imagined another person.

This time, he thought about Watcher Ainkel. As soon as he opened his eyes, In-gong was overwhelmed.

A gigantic creature was looking down at In-gong from a very high place. Ainkel's body was a huge green dragon; this was the appearance he had seen when he conquered her dragon heart on Enger Plains. In-gong quickly changed the setting. Then Ainkel, who was bigger than a mountain, became the smaller Green Wind.

'Ohh.'

Deer horns sprouted from amidst long green hair, and leaves and stems weaved together to form natural clothes. She was a sacred, elegant and noble existence, and her green eyes were full of mystery.

It was the Green Wind he had first seen on Enger Plains.

The next moment, another Green Wind appeared next to Ainkel. She was the cute and charming Green Wind.

Their faces were the same, but the atmosphere they gave off was different. Unlike Ainkel, who stood calmly, Green Wind seemed like she wanted to rush toward In-gong. He was forced to think of a puppy eager to follow her master's command.

It was at that moment that a tail formed from between Green Wind's hips, and a dog snack appeared in front of her.

In-gong tried to hold in his laughter. It was cute, but somehow, he felt sorry. The Green Wind before him was the way that In-gong thought of her. Still, wasn't it quite an exaggeration?

'Anyway, this is fun.'

This time, In-gong imagined Felicia. She was dressed in a woman's suit and wearing black framed glasses, so she looked as good as expected. Although Felicia was the age

of a high school student, In-gong's image of Felicia was closer to a teacher or career woman.

Carack wore a black suit and sunglasses. It looked good since he had a great physique.

In-gong summoned Nayatra and looked around reflexively. Although he felt like the gazes of Conquest and Ainkel were somewhat judging, he changed Nayatra into a nurse outfit. Indeed, it worked well.

It was difficult to stop once he starting playing with them like dolls. Except for the white woman and Ainkel, In-gong erased the rest of the characters.

In the first place, the Lucid Dream Pillow was being used today in order to prepare for the fight against Vandal. In-gong imagined the barbarian king and Vandal, and the barbarian king and Vandal were now standing side by side.

'Next is to limit their abilities.'

If he changed everything using his thoughts, it wouldn't be proper training. In-gong added additional settings so their abilities matched his current stats.

'Can I use this to preview my stats?'

This was a type of simulator, so it was possible to verify how he should distribute his remaining points in the most efficient way.

'The more I look at it, the more this system seems like a scam.'

It would be no help in reality, but the value of the item wasn't just how it could be utilized in battle. Like Felicia said, this was a tremendous item.

Now that he knew the true value of the item, he was once again thankful to Caitlin. Including Felicia, they were the two people he really wanted to protect.

'Okay, then I shall begin.'

"You haven't set up a situation and story yet."

“Do you want to start the dream?”

“Once you start the dream, you won’t be able to wake up for eight hours unless something special happens.”

“Examples of extraordinary events includes a strong impact from the outside, a strong request from the user or damage to the Lucid Dream Pillow in real life.”

In-gong nodded. He had told Green Wind beforehand to wake him up if something happened.

In-gong was hoping for a fight with the barbarian king and Vandal, so no scenarios or settings were needed.

“Well, I’ll start the dream. I hope you have a good dream.”

The moment the elegant voice spoke, the world changed. Everything was intact, but In-gong could feel it.

Everything in his dream came to life.

In-gong turned to Conquest. As expected, she didn’t say anything. She looked at In-gong with lonely but affectionate eyes.

Why was she making that expression? She had said that In-gong was her only hope.

Famine and Death felt strong affection toward her. War was ambivalent, but was a bit different from Famine and Death. War still liked Conquest.

In-gong wanted to hear more stories from Conquest, but it seemed impossible.

In-gong then turned toward Ainkel. She faced him and laughed softly. Ainkel grabbed the wind and made an invisible chair, then she said joyfully,

“The Lucid Dream Pillow is an interesting item. I know who made this item, but I can’t tell you. You still don’t have enough knowledge.”

As the elegant voice had pointed out, In-gong hadn't specified any instructions or stories. Nevertheless, Ainkel was acting like this. Moreover, the words she spoke weren't things he knew.

She knew who made it but couldn't tell him; this was knowledge unknown to In-gong.

"Ain... kel?"

"I'm not Ainkel. I am her remnant. I suppose I am the last piece. I am just the fragment of memory and personality that remains in the dragon heart. I am closer to your cute Green Wind than Ainkel."

In-gong understood. It wasn't just Conquest who dwelled in In-gong's soul; there was also the fragment of Ainkel.

In-gong turned to Conquest again, but she was still the same.

Ainkel said,

"The Lucid Dream Pillow is versatile, but it is still a limited tool. This world is made by you and is for you. I am buried deep in your consciousness and can talk to you with the help of the Lucid Dream Pillow, but that is it. I am limited in helping you and giving you information related to knowledge that you already have."

In-gong understood this. He then asked in a blunt manner,

"Ainkel, are Conquest, War, Famine and Death... involved in your death?"

"I guess so."

It was the answer he had expected. In the end, there was no reliable reason to change In-gong's thoughts.

Instead of becoming frustrated, In-gong changed the topic to something else.

"Ainkel, I want to go to a dragon's grave to learn dragon magic. Can you tell me where a dragon's grave is?"

“You know the place. However, there are many things in your memory, so it isn’t coming up. I will give you a good tip. Figure out how to take advantage of me. Yes, I can help you if this is the case.”

Obviously, he had seen it in the game, but he couldn’t remember it properly. Although Zephyr was a dragon humanoid, he felt no need to visit a dragon’s grave because he couldn’t learn dragon magic.

A dragon’s grave was a training ground for dragons. In Knight Saga, it was a place where a mighty dragon educated his children.

Ainkel summoned In-gong’s memory for him, and a map showing the approximate location of the dragon’s grave emerged in his head. It was the same as he had seen in a book.

As In-gong’s expression brightened, Ainkel smiled and said,

“I will leave it here for today. It is a short meeting, but I have been sleeping for too long. We can have a longer conversation next time.”

In-gong felt somewhat regretful, but he didn’t show this towards Ainkel.

“I will go back now. Conquest Knight, look after Green Wind well.”

With those words, Ainkel closed her eyes. She didn’t disappear into the wind like Green Wind, but In-gong could tell that the Ainkel in front of him now was just an empty shell.

In-gong sent Ainkel back. He would do the same to Conquest, but in the end, he didn’t. Perhaps she didn’t know that she could speak to In-gong through the Lucid Dream Pillow.

“Okay, then back to the main point.”

In-gong turned towards the barbarian king and Vandal. It was like they had suddenly gained life, and the barbarian king and Vandal stared at In-gong.

The world of the Lucid Dream Pillow was a dream. Thus, it was impossible to gain experience or raise his skill levels while inside the dream. Even so, he was able to

experience it. He was able to understand his techniques more deeply and could find ways to utilize them.

In-gong exhaled, and when he raised his head, he had Earth Quaker, White Eagle, Night Watch and the Dragon Scales Greaves equipped.

“Let’s get started.”

The barbarian king raised Skull Crusher and approached.

Then eight hours later...

By the time Carack woke In-gong up, he had experienced 32 deaths.

“Shutra, did I appear in the dream?”

“Amita appeared.”



# Chapter 133

## Cross #3

“You woke up?”

Carack’s face was visible in his distorted view. Instead of answering, In-gong blinked several times. Every time his eyelids closed and opened, his field of vision became clearer.

“Master, I let the orc wake you up after the time that Master said. Is this okay?”

He heard Green Wind’s voice from her bedside. In-gong reached out and stroked Green Wind’s head.

“Okay, well done.”

Green Wind’s face brightened at In-gong’s praise, and he thought of the dog’s tail he had seen in his dream.

After raising his upper body, Carack handed him a glass of cold water and looked at the Lucid Dream Pillow.

“It looks like you used the pillow. What type of dream did you have?”

In-gong looked down reflexively at Carack’s question. His face was redder than usual.

“Huh?”

“That’s great. Your face has revived. You are like a new recruit who survived alone in his first battle after all the troops have been killed.”

In-gong laughed at the odd details but nodded.

“Well, it is similar.”

“Prince?”

Carack asked again, but In-gong didn't give a specific answer. Then Carack scratched the back of his head before changing the topic.

“Prince, quite a bit of time has passed. Today, we are departing after lunch. There is still some time, so there is no need to hurry. Lunch is going to be a little earlier than usual. Oh, and the princesses want to see Prince.”

Carack's report flowed over him. In-gong blinked.

“Noona?”

It was common for the two people to look for In-gong, but they wouldn't come in the morning for no reason.

As In-gong stood up, Carack said,

“Karma went to inform them that Prince is up, so both of them will come soon. Additionally, Nayatra has prepared breakfast for when Prince wakes up, so you just need to wash and eat.”

These days, it was Nayatra who prepared breakfast for In-gong every day. Carack had been confused by Nayatra's cold attitude, but it seemed like he had now adapted.

“Your Highness, it is Nayatra.”

He could hear Nayatra's voice from outside the tent. Carack laughed as he held out the water, and In-gong began to wash hurriedly. After washing up and eating breakfast, Caitlin and Felicia entered the tent. The two of them appeared at the same time.

Caitlin saw the Lucid Dream Pillow and asked with a bright face,

“Shutra, you used the pillow. How is it? Did you dream? Did you really dream of anything you wanted?”

In-gong laughed at her curiosity. Once he saw Caitlin's enthusiastic response, it seemed strange that Caitlin gave the Lucid Dream Pillow to In-gong instead of keeping it for herself.

'It feels good.'

His mood improved due to Caitlin's emotions.

"Yes, I tried it last night. It was really amazing as it did what my mind wanted."

Caitlin's eyes started to shine like lanterns at In-gong's words, and she asked with an excited face,

"Shutra, did I appear in the dream?"

"Amita appeared."

In-gong laughed awkwardly. He hadn't expected her to ask directly like that.

Caitlin's eyes widened at In-gong's answer.

"Amita?"

Did he say the wrong answer?

Carack asked from the right side,

"Prince, you slept on the dream pillow, and the raccoon came out? What did you dream of?"

Carack struggled to imagine it. Right then, Green Wind spoke up,

"Master, did I appear?"

"Uh, yes."

She was making a face full of expectation, so In-gong replied hurriedly. Green Wind sighed with relief and gloated,

"Master is a great master."

"Eung."

In-gong replied awkwardly and felt a tinge of remorse. He couldn't tell her she had appeared with a dog's tail.

However, the others now started to ask questions. The first one was Felicia.

"Shutra, did I show up?"

"Uh... yes."

"Hoh..."

As In-gong avoided her gaze, Felicia's eyes narrowed strangely. He didn't know if it was a good or bad thing, but then Carack went on to ask a question,

"Prince, did I appear?"

"You appear... ed?"

He had clearly appeared, but unlike the others, all In-gong had done was change his clothes.

After Carack, Nayatra spoke from a corner,

"Your Highness, what about me?"

"Eung."

In-gong avoided her gaze again. Caitlin's eyes narrowed even more than Felicia's as she asked,

"Shutra, then was I the only one who didn't appear?"

"No, that..."

"Prince, what did you dream of?"

Carack asked the question that everyone was wondering. In-gong started to explain with a relieved expression,

"I dreamt about fighting the barbarian king. I can dream whatever I want. I thought it could be used for combat simulations."

"Then why did we come out in the dream? What about 6th Princess and the raccoon?"

"Shutra, did you dream about fighting me?"

"If it is a fighting dream, then shouldn't I appear?"

Carack, Felicia and Caitlin spoke in turn. The more he said, the more the situation seemed twisted. In-gong changed the subject hurriedly,

"Ah, well! I had a dream about fighting the barbarian king, and it was a great help. Thank you for the great gift, Caitlin noona. Then, why did both of you want to see me?"

It was obvious that he was changing the conversation, but it was accepted. Felicia patted the head of Caitlin, who was sulking, and said,

"Amita said to gather. They have completed more equipment."

"Oh, finally."

It had been a long time since they left the Demon King's Palace for Evian. High-end equipment wasn't created in an instant, and they had used this time to finish more of them.

Felicia gave a long sigh.

"She didn't have proper working conditions because we kept moving. Shutra doesn't know, but Amita has been angry every day. Daphne was truly suffering."

"I will praise them later."

Daphne wasn't a member of the King's Knights but she belonged to In-gong's faction. An appropriate reward was required.

"Karma will bring them soon."

Karma was busy moving this morning. Meanwhile, In-gong was locked in his thoughts as he waited for Amita.

Then something came to his mind again.

‘There has been quite a lot of progress.’

It had been several months since he set up his tent in the Jishuka Mountains, and many things had changed since then.

In-gong had many subordinates. He also had supporters, such as the sword duke and the 4th Queen Elaine Moonlight, and had even created a faction which contained five of the demon king’s children.

‘I also obtained Nayatra, and I will soon get Vandal.’

They were two of the three subordinates he loved the best in Knight Saga. Now was the time to move one step further.

It wasn’t just strength which was necessary to become the demon king. Of course, the power of the royal child was an important factor, but it was impossible to take on the whole Demon World alone. So, the royal child’s armed forces were necessary.

His forces...

The outline was starting to form. He hadn’t met 3rd Queen Sylvia Doomblade yet, but the dark elf reinforcements sent to this battle meant her support. So, In-gong could think of the dark elves as his.

‘Moreover, there is Felicia.’

The dark elves were a maternal society, so Felicia’s position was significant. Without her, it wouldn’t be easy to get the support of the dark elves.

The dark elves and the lycanthropes... Two children of the demon king were supporting In-gong. It was a solid background, but he couldn’t depend on it. In-gong had now reached the stage where he could have an intelligence organization move independently.

In Knight Saga, Nayatra was both an escort knight and the head of his information organization. Vandal was also in command of Zephyr's armed organization.

Once all the rewards for Evian were settled, the merit level would be quite high. Hopefully, it would be possible to have his organization official registered with the Demon King's Palace.

'And... it is time to contact the religious churches.'

Religion wasn't something he could pass over. The species in the Demon World believed in different gods.

The lycanthropes followed Stella, the goddess of the moon and hunt, while the dark elves followed Camilla, the goddess of dreams and shadows.

The humans disparaged the gods as demonic gods, but the same doctrines existed.

In fact, he didn't know if they were the same or distinct existences, but it was a world where divine power existed in the same way as magic. The power of the churches was quite intense in the Demon World.

The religion with the greatest power in the Demon World was the Erebos religion which worshipped the god of the night and the darkness, who could be called the god of the demon king. In Knight Saga, they could be allies or enemies depending on Zephyr's choice.

'Dark Saintess Altesia.'

If Beatrice, the saintess of light, was on the side of the Human World, the dark saintess Altesia would be on the side of the Demon World. They were beauties with tremendous divine powers, but the positions of the two were quite different in Knight Saga.

Unlike Beatrice, the so-called heroine, Altesia could either join or not join Zephyr. If she joined Zephyr, she could be used for the long term. However, if she were an enemy, Zephyr would trample on her without any hesitation. So, Nayatra wasn't the only one he wanted in the Demon World.

Anyhow, now was the time to contact the Erebos religion. Maybe he wouldn't need to

move first.

‘It will be very helpful.’

Altesia wasn't the only one who belonged to the Erebos church. There were many other talented people, such as the church's ruler Floriodus and Antonios, the chief knight. Moreover, the Erebos church dispatched pilgrims throughout the Demon World. Their intelligence would help find Sektum, whose location was unknown.

‘Okay, okay. I will pull them in one by one.’

In-gong was burning with ambition.

“What were you thinking about so intently?”

In-gong raised his head at Felicia's voice. Amita had arrived at the entrance of the tent without him realizing it. As always, Daphne was accompanying them.

“This Amita has finished!”

Unlike the usual, their tail was waving in the air. so Amita seemed to be feeling quite good. Amita folded their arms proudly. After Amita, Daphne appeared, dressed in very colourful clothes, with orc soldiers who were carrying a few boxes.

“Our pretty Daphne's clothes are finished. It is a great piece of clothing which increases her affinity with the spirits. It contains defensive spells that I designed specifically.”

Daphne laughed at Amita's proud words and added,

“It isn't an exaggeration to say that every embroidery is a magic circle. Amita's skill is really great.”

“Well well. I guess so.”

Daphne winked at everyone from behind Amita's back. Everyone understood the meaning and kept silent to make Amita feel better.

“Hrmm, next is the equipment for 8th Princess.”



“Me?”

“Yes, it was originally part of 9th Prince’s full set, but it will be given to you.”

Amita responded to the excitement and pointed to the smallest box. Daphne opened the lid to reveal a pair of gauntlets. The part where the hand would be inserted was blue, while the metal part was silver. Unlike Earth Quaker which was tough and intense, these gauntlets were sophisticated and gave off a luxurious feel.

Caitlin asked with shining eyes,

“Amita, can I try it?”

“Of course. It is yours.”

As soon as permission was given, Caitlin quickly pulled on the gauntlets. The dark clothes were slightly big, but they resized as soon as Caitlin put them on.

“8th Princess is still growing up, so I added a resizing feature.”

Amita started to recite the performance of the gauntlets like they were a professor. Caitlin listened to the explanation and laughed as she looked at In-gong.

“Thank you, Shutra. I will use them well.”

“I was the one who made it. Yes?”

Amita pounded the ground with their tail, and Caitlin laughed before hugging them. With that, Amita felt better and started opening more boxes. There were two armour pieces belonging to Karma and Seira. Both were black due to the black dragon’s scales and leather, but the designs were quite different.

Karma’s was a leather armour which clung to her body, while Seira’s was close to heavy armour with sharp edges. There were black metal plates attached which seemed to have a resizing function like Caitlin’s gauntlets.

As Karma and Seira accepted the armour, Carack asked in a coy voice,

“Raccoon, is mine ready yet?”

“There is still a long way to go. Don’t I have many pieces? You should be satisfied since you were the first one to receive your shield!”

Carack stepped back with a sullen expression. In-gong laughed and complimented Amita more.

Three days later, they recaptured the fourth base the barbarians had abandoned.

Then In-gong and Vandal faced each other; it was the day of the promised fight.

# Chapter 134

## Cross #4

Evian's winter wasn't far away. Due to the influence of the limit line, the closer to the east it was, the colder the air would be.

The fourth base was a mess. The barbarians hadn't repaired the fourth base after occupying it because they hadn't intended on staying for long. The walls were collapsed, and the smashed gate was literally on the ground. The moment the fourth base had been taken, the supplies warehouse had been burnt by the leader, so it was full of ashes. Nothing else could be found.

It would have been great to see snow. There were no clouds in the sky, and the blowing wind was as cold and sharp as an ice blade.

In-gong and Vandal left the base. There were many people who wanted to see the fight between the two, however, it wasn't meant to be a spectacle in the first place. Moreover, the struggle could destroy the already shattered base. It was no exaggeration to say the strength of an advanced general was a moving disaster.

The soldiers climbed up onto the walls and watched from a distance. Only the 9th Prince's aide and the party of the princesses were allowed to accompany In-gong and Vandal.

In-gong and Vandal stood facing each other in the wilderness. Evian was a wilderness, so it wasn't necessary to choose a battlefield.

Felicia, who had been anxious on the walk here, was at a loss. It was because General Vandal was fully armed, like this was a battle.

"Excuse me, General Vandal. Is this really necessary?"

Felicia asked in a strident voice as she looked nervously at Vandal, who seemed bigger than normal. Her eyes were shaken.

Vandal liked Felicia. She was an upright person, so he wasn't going to lie to give her comfort.

"I have to do my best."

Vandal said softly as he stared in front of him. 20 meters away, Caitlin was standing beside In-gong with an anxious expression akin Felicia's.

"Do you really not need my help?"

She didn't mean for them to fight together. Caitlin was asking him to take advantage of the penta-core.

In-gong shook his head. The penta-core was certainly a great force, but it couldn't be established without Caitlin's help. It didn't fit in a fight against Vandal.

"It's okay, this is a confrontation between Vandal and me."

It was a confrontation between only two people. If he was the In-gong who had encountered the orcs in the dwarf cave, he would have avoided the fight, rather than fight alone. When did he become so brave?

'It is because I have to become the demon king.'

He needed to become a person suitable for that position.

In-gong smiled as he thought about it. Then In-gong heard a voice, which was just as restless as Caitlin's, in his ears,

'Master, I can't understand it. I am Master's.'

White Eagle and Black Eagle wouldn't be used. In-gong had Black Eagle removed, and only attached White Eagle lightly to his arm. In-gong refused to have Green Wind's help. She wasn't a tool like Earth Quaker or Night Watch, and In-gong wanted to fight by himself.

Green Wind was grouchy from In-gong's attitude and joined Caitlin. In-gong appreciated the worries of the two people, so he couldn't help giving a small smile.

Carack didn't mutter any words. He just stood far away and gazed at In-gong with calm and trusting eyes.

Felicia moved back so that only In-gong and Vandal were left. Vandal grinned awkwardly as he held the handle of a large battle hammer.

"I predicted you would be strong, but I didn't think it would happen within a few months."

In-gong recalled their first meeting. At that time, In-gong had found it hard to deal with Villager A, let alone an orc. However, it was different now. Everything had changed.

"Isn't this good?"

In-gong mock shrugged, while Vandal laughed silently.

In-gong's growth was abnormal. It was even a surprise for Felicia, even though she knew the facts such as the dragon heart and Moonlight Core.

Vandal didn't know about such processes, but he didn't question it. He had already made up his mind.

"On that day, I was ready to die. Then Prince appeared in front of me."

Vandal had been caught by the pursuing barbarians. He had prepared for the end and dug deep into enemy territory. Vandal was about to say something, then he shook his head. Instead of clumsy words, he said,

"I don't know if you are possessed by a ghost. Anyway, I am unfamiliar with expressing my feelings with long words. I am grateful for your time."

Vandal raised his battle hammer. The steel-like muscles, revealed between the partial armour, swelled significantly.

In-gong closed his eyes and refined his breathing. He formed fists and said lightly,

"Shall we start?"

“Let’s get started.”

The next conversation would be with their fists.

Vandal poured his battle cry into the sky. Instead of feeling fear, In-gong stood against the battle cry which seemed to rock the heavens and the earth. He released his breath and activated all the things he had prepared.

The buff spells he had learnt from Green Wind, Felicia and Daphne wound around In-gong’s body, and sacred green flames rose from the Dragon Scale Greaves.

Then his aura hearts...

His aura revolved around the dragon heart and his two other hearts. The triple core swelled and produced a strong aura flow.

However, that wasn’t all.

A dragon heart wasn’t a heart with simple aura. The dragon heart—the symbol of a dragon—could be called a dragon’s essence. Powerful magic power sprang from the dragon heart. Separate from aura, it shone green as Ainkel’s symbol, and the dragon heart revolved aura and magic power.

The effect was like a quad-core. Then one last thing was added, and the power of a dragon was pushed to the utmost limit.

‘Dragon Blood.’

Not just the dragon heart, but all three of In-gong’s artifacts responded. Earth Quaker growled angrily while emitting a red and yellow glow.

It was really a huge power. Faced with In-gong’s fearsome momentum, Vandal just laughed wildly and lifted his battle hammer.

Felicia’s eyes closed tightly like she couldn’t watch anymore, while Caitlin and Green Wind held hands.

Carack just laughed. As In-gong and Vandal rushed at each other, Carack spoke in a quiet voice,

“Win.”

He didn't say anything more. Carack then formed a fist and gazed at In-gong. He remembered the moment when he had shouted, 'Faster than the wind!'.

Finally, In-gong and Vandal clashed, and the roar shook the heavens and the earth.

In-gong spread out on the ground. His flaccid limbs spread out like a squid, but he didn't feel like moving. No, it didn't make sense.

In-gong was lying in a tent which was set up in the middle of the fourth base. Carack was sitting next to him.

“So, why did you act so recklessly.”

Carack clicked his tongue and covered In-gong with a blanket. In-gong moaned and said,

“Victory. I wanted to win.”

He hadn't expected to level up. Although he defeated Vandal, it wasn't reflected properly in the experience.

Carack clicked his tongue again. Even now, he could see In-gong's last reckless attack when he closed his eyes.

Surprisingly, In-gong had allowed Vandal to strike him, and he hadn't avoided it. In order to counterattack, In-gong had taken the brunt of Vandal's attack.

Even more surprisingly, he had managed to endure it. The magic shield and aura barrier he created had been shattered with a loud sound, but he had been able to withstand Vandal's left fist. Then In-gong had dealt the final blow on Vandal and won.

In the dream the Lucid Dream Pillow created, In-gong had experienced 32 deaths, and In-gong learnt many things from those deaths.

So far, In-gong had poured most of his additional points into strength. However, this time he spent a lot of points on durability as well as practicing a one-point aura defense.

For In-gong, the thing he was lacking most in was defense. He couldn't rely solely on Green Wind to steer White Eagle. He didn't forget that he had been driven to the brink of death by a single strike from the barbarian king.

He would have invested in agility, but this wasn't a game. To In-gong, this was all reality.

Vandal was a rather arduous opponent for In-gong. In order to win against such an opponent, he needed to gamble. In-gong strengthened his weakness and endured Vandal's hit instead of evading.

The result was a great success.

Moreover, it wasn't just his defense. He had done it without activating the quad-core he shared with Caitlin. It was a true blend of aura and magic. It was still incomplete, but he was sure the direction he was moving in wasn't wrong. It was in the distant future, but he would someday be able to add divine power and psychic power as well.

"Your eyes are burning with ambition again."

Carack laughed at In-gong.

"It is that obvious?"

"It is obvious. It is just burning."

Carack said with a smirk before looking at In-gong's condition again. Thanks to Felicia using recovery magic while she cried, In-gong's injuries were already better. The problem was the excessive use of aura and the exhaustion of his spirit.

It was at that moment that Carack got up suddenly. He looked at someone large who was approaching from a distance.

"Prince, it is General Vandal."



In-gong also saw Vandal in the mini-map. Dressed in leather pants, Vandal entered into In-gong's tent and sat down next to the entrance.

"Prince."

"You came."

In-gong was lying down. Looking at their appearances, Vandal was the winner and In-gong was the loser.

However, In-gong was the victor of the battle. Vandal touched his belly and said.

"That was a nice blow. My stomach hurts even now."

"My whole body is hurting."

Vandal laughed at In-gong's words. Then he looked In-gong up and down and said,

"As Prince knows, I am an advanced general of the Demon King's Palace. It is a position that I can't just leave."

The ten advanced generals of the Demon King's Palace were pillars which maintained the army. It wasn't a place that just anyone could rise to or simply quit after having attained it.

"But if Prince ever calls, I will run to Prince."

Vandal said in a gentle voice, before turning his head and coughing suddenly.

"Really. I've never spoken like this to anyone, even females."

Carack refrained from laughing, while In-gong smiled calmly and waited for Vandal's next words.

Vandal sighed and looked back at In-gong.

"But I have to say it. I want to fight with Prince. I want to run behind Prince once more."

It wasn't just because In-gong had won against Vandal. Vandal had already had the

idea before today's spar.

"On that day... I thought so when I saw Prince's back. I decided so."

That day, he had been ready to die. Then at that moment, he saw the back of a king.

"It is tricky. Will this be enough?"

Vandal turned his attention to In-gong, who understood Vandal's thoughts. In-gong forced his body upwards and said,

"It is more than enough. Then, I will appoint you."

Carack helped In-gong stand in front of Vandal, who naturally bowed to In-gong. Due to his size, Vandal was still eye-level with In-gong, but that didn't matter.

In-gong stretched out his hands toward Vandal...

And Vandal was appointed as the fifth knight.

Zephyr raised his head and looked toward the south-east. He felt a pain in his heart, but it was just a short pain.

There was a hellish scene before Zephyr. Hundreds of bodies were on the ground, and the bodies were all destroyed.

Zephyr felt the movement of magic power. It was a magic which insulted the living and harassed the dead. Even shattered body parts were joined together again.

All of it was flowing from the heart of one man on the ground. The man, whose legs had been cut off by Zephyr, was still breathing naturally.

Necromancer Sektum...

The name was unknown, but Zephyr wasn't stupid enough to miss the jewel before him.

Zephyr stood in front of Sektum, who had pale blonde hair and a pale face. Sektum's blue eyes were filled with horror and terror toward Zephyr.

Zephyr stabbed a knife each in both of Sektum's shoulders. Then he forcefully inscribed the subordinate magic on the forehead of Sektum, who thrashed and moaned with pain. It was a somewhat rough method, but it couldn't be helped since he had no time.

After completely subduing Sektum, Zephyr looked toward the north. He could feel gazes looking at him from ridiculously far away.

Death and War...

There were things which could not be expressed.

Zephyr raised his sword and filled it with magic power. He blocked the eyes which were looking at him from a distance and lifted Sektum with telekinesis.

Once again, he looked toward the south-east.

# Chapter 135

## Torrent

Humans were weak.

If one looked at them, one would see there were many missing parts.

The gandharva and elves were beautiful and had long lives. The sura and draconians were powerful, while the ogres had superhuman strength. As for the lycanthropes and orcs—they were unmatched in toughness.

On the other hand, humans didn't have any of that.

They didn't have long lives like many species in the Demon World. Their innate bodies were fragile, and no matter how strong they were, it was impossible for them to cope with an ogre. Humans didn't even have the strength to face an orc, let alone a lycanthrope.

However, half of the world was dominated by humans. Humans were also the species with the largest number of individuals in the world.

They were smarter than orcs and ogres, stronger than elves and boasted a mighty breeding capacity which surpassed the gandharva and the sura.

That wasn't all.

There were many variants which could appear, and sometimes special existences could be born in the Human World.

An existence that went beyond human limitations... He was the one who shone among the numerous human beings. The pinnacle of humanity—he was a person who was closer to a god than anyone else.

A human sword and shield...

People called him a hero.

Five days had passed since In-gong recaptured the fourth base.

They started the reconstruction at the fourth base, which had been partially destroyed by the barbarians. The tasks were to rebuild the collapsed walls and install a new gate.

The materials and supplies which came from Takar were piled up in the base. Evian's real winter was coming soon, so they had to hurry. If they missed the timing, they might have to stop the reconstruction of the gate.

However, they couldn't concentrate comfortably on the construction work. Vandal led troops out daily to patrol the limit line. It was hard to imagine the barbarians, who had lost more than 10,000 troops and a barbarian king, would cross the line again, but there was still a chance. The army was a group which existed for this reason.

Kaparang and Alita were working hard, and In-gong had nothing to do because Vandal was in charge of the patrols. However, In-gong didn't stay idle. He sparred with Caitlin every day and also worked hard to study magic with Felicia. Now was the time for him to become a true magic warrior.

"Don't talk about this, especially to Prince Silvan."

"What about Silvan hyung?"

"Do you have to ask?"

In-gong nodded at Carack's sincere advice and stored the words 'magic warrior' in his mind.

Two more days passed. Amita completed Delia's armour, and the gate was re-installed at the fourth base. As a result of the patrols, Vandal was able to find the barbarians who were in hiding, so he was satisfied.

Nayatra had some achievements as well.

"The results of the interrogation have emerged."

Nayatra had questioned the barbarian warriors for a week. The barbarian king had already been defeated, but there were still many things he needed to know.

In particular, In-gong considered the transformation of the barbarian king to be noteworthy. How had he united the barbarians without the Dragon King's Golden Helmet? Additionally, since when had he been able to use the power of War?

General soldiers wouldn't know this. It was impossible for them to figure out the whole picture. However, there was one person he could learn all of this from:

Paratus, the brother of the barbarian king.

During the battle at Takar, In-gong couldn't afford to capture Paratus. Paratus was strong, and In-gong was exhausted from his battle with the barbarian king.

However, In-gong wasn't the only one present at Takar. The barbarian king had died, and Vandal's troops hadn't missed Paratus as they rushed from behind.

After being captured, Paratus had attempted to escape, commit suicide and then keep his mouth shut in front of Nayatra. In-gong didn't know what Nayatra had done, but she succeeded in opening Paratus' mouth.

'What is her method of interrogation?'

He couldn't imagine that Nayatra would use cruel torture methods. Was it the enchantment magic of a succubus?

"Your Highness?"

Nayatra asked from in front of In-gong. He flinched with surprise and waved his hands.

"No, it is nothing. Paratus is in the prison?"

"Yes, do you want to meet him?"

In-gong nodded at Nayatra's question. It seemed Nayatra didn't want to take In-gong into the prison.

“Are there any problems in the prison?”

The quick Carack asked sharply. Nayatra’s eyes narrowed but because she was in front of In-gong, she corrected her expression and spoke in a calm voice.

“There are no problems in the prison. The state of the captives isn’t bad. Just...”

“Just?”

“That... I am a little embarrassed.”

Nayatra replied with a slightly red face. In-gong could only say one thing in response to her reaction,

“Please.”

“I understand. I will come with you.”

In response, Nayatra took the lead, and In-gong and Carack entered the dungeon behind her.

Unlike the exterior walls, the dungeon was fine. It was an underground facility, so the barbarians hadn’t felt the need to destroy it.

‘Surprisingly clean.’

Although it was underground, it didn’t seem extremely dirty. There were barbarian prisoners hanging from the walls of the prison cells.

“The prisoners only have a meal once every two days. Starving them leads to less trouble.”

Carack spoke in a small voice from his position next to In-gong. Although it was quite inhumane, In-gong didn’t complain. In the first place, this was the Demon World. It was better than torturing them.

“This way.”

Paratus was stuck in solitary confinement. As a big iron door was opened, he saw

Paratus sitting on a chair, tied up with chains.

“His spirit is gone.”

Carack said as he saw the blank expression Paratus was making. Nayatra muttered in a small voice,

“I enchanted him with magic. Now, he will answer any of Your Highness’ questions.”

It seemed like she was ashamed of the fact she had bewitched Paratus with enchantment magic. Enchantment magic was a characteristic of the succubus species, so what was so embarrassing about it?

Instead of asking her, In-gong approached Paratus to question him. The replies came straight away just as Nayatra said.

It wasn’t surprising that Paratus knew more than any of the other barbarians.

The barbarian king had been able to unite the barbarians because he had been strong. That was the best answer Paratus could come up with. However, the useful part was the information about War.

“A person came from the south and passed some things onto my brother. They were a very questionable stranger, but my brother admired them.”

They wore a large red cloak over red armour, and it was impossible to tell if they were a male or female. They appeared six months ago. It wasn’t a short period of time, so that person could have moved anywhere in the Demon World by now.

“The stranger left for the north. They didn’t go back to the south.”

This was all Paratus knew. There was no other useful information.

‘A person in red armour.’

It had to be the War Knight, or an Apostle of War like the barbarian king.

However, the most worrisome thing was that the red person had come from the south. Just like the barbarians beyond the Eastern Limit Line, the south was the Human



World.

Had the War Knight come from the south? There was a very good chance of that. There was no law that the Four Knights of the Apocalypse had to come out of the Demon World. However, who were they? Would they be a powerhouse of the Human World, perhaps just like Gerard?

In-gong worried about it, but the answer didn't come out. Then In-gong stopped thinking about that and left the cell.

"Good job."

He didn't forget to praise Nayatra, who smiled with red cheeks.

"Thank you."

She replied gracefully. It was a beautiful smile, and In-gong sensed a gap between the Nayatra of Knight Saga and the Nayatra before him now. The Nayatra of Knight Saga would never smile like she was doing now and was called an ice cold knight. Was it due to the slavery? Or did her attitude harden because of Zephyr?

'Well, it doesn't matter since I'm in a good condition right now.'

There was still a lot to be addressed, but it seemed like his relationship with Nayatra was quite good.

'Although it was forced... I am grateful for her support.'

In-gong sighed with relief as he looked at Nayatra. Then Nayatra, who was sneaking a glance at In-gong, quickly bowed her head.

"Well, I feel quite bad."

Carack's complaint was ignored as they left the dungeon, and someone came running up to them. It was Delia.

"Your Highness."

She had rushed and was out of breath. In-gong ignored Carack, who was smiling at

Delia, and asked her,

“What’s going on?”

“6th Princess says there is an urgent message.”

“Felicia noona?”

“She might need to leave Evian for a while. The princess is waiting for Prince in your office.”

In-gong needed to listen to the details of this story, so he sent Nayatra back and moved hastily with Carack and Delia.

“Silvan contacted me. I think he needs my help.”

Felicia sat on the desk in the office In-gong was using. After she finished speaking, In-gong approached the desk and asked,

“Is there a problem on Silvan hyung’s side?”

“Well, a little? It isn’t a big deal. He was tracking down a few ruins, and it seems like he has found a site. He needs my help as a ruins expert.”

In-gong thought about Silvan’s region. If he found something, it was likely In-gong already knew about it.

‘There wasn’t anything dangerous.’

He couldn’t think of anything dangerous in that area.

Felicia saw In-gong’s worried look and said,

“You don’t have to worry. It is just an excuse to look around because I want to see it.”

In-gong thought about Silvan and Felicia’s words and was convinced. Felicia jumped off the desk and said,

“It is unlikely the barbarians will come back again, and Evian’s defense has now stabilized somewhat. Can I go help Silvan for a while?”

In-gong was in charge at Evian. Despite also being a royal child, Felicia needed In-gong’s permission to leave Evian.

In-gong nodded without any worries.

“I understand. Instead, be careful. Please contact me if something happens. I’ll run over straight away.”

“Yes, faster than the wind?”

Felicia winked, and In-gong nodded with a somewhat red face. He was embarrassed about the slogan he had come up with. Felicia laughed at In-gong’s expression.

“Okay, I’ll just tell you something else.”

Felicia reached out to In-gong’s neck and pulled out the Tears of a Dark Elf hanging there.

“Shutra, do you know why I gave you the Tears of a Dark Elf?”

It was a gift Felicia had given to In-gong as a reward for his actions during the Red Lightning tribe mission. Felicia rotated her hand to show In-gong a ring.

“The Tears of a Dark Elf is actually a set of a ring and a necklace. If one of the owners is in a serious crisis, the other one will become aware of it.”

It was the first time he had heard this story. In Knight Saga, he had only been able to get his hands on the necklace after knocking down Felicia.

However, Felicia just waved her hands at his doubts and said,

“So far, I have been right next to In-gong. Of course, it wouldn’t have worked.”

It made a lot of sense. The only time he had been in a crisis without Felicia being there was when he fought Mustafa. After that, Felicia was always with him.

"I gave you the Tears of a Dark Elf to pay off my debt. If Shutra's in danger, I will show up and rescue you."

That was the true reason why Felicia had given him the Tears of a Dark Elf.

"Maybe this time, there will be a chance to repay the debt."

"Hey, isn't it more likely that Noona will be in a crisis?"

"Let's see?"

Felicia laughed as she covered her face with a fan and knocked against In-gong's shoulders.

"Please look after Caitlin."

"Tell Silvan hyung to look after Noona as well."

Felicia made a dissatisfied face at In-gong's words.

"Anyway, I've received permission from the leader of the Evian mission. Then I will leave now."

"Right now?"

"Yes, there is no reason to delay. And you don't have to see me off. I've decided to go to Takar with Caitlin. She is already at the gate."

As she said this, Felicia was already prepared to leave. In-gong was dumbfounded and asked with narrow eyes,

"Excuse me, did you even need my permission?"

Felicia just laughed instead of answering. She hugged In-gong and said,

"I am going, Shutra."

"Go well, Felicia."

Felicia pinched In-gong's cheeks and left the room. As always, she moved with light and elegant steps.

In-gong looked at her back and said quietly,

"Will nothing really happened?"

He didn't have a foreboding or ominous feeling, so nothing should happen.

Carack blinked at In-gong's words and asked him,

"Prince, is this really okay? Should Princess really leave Prince? Is there really no ominous hint?"

"Why are you doing this? Don't jinx things."

Both of them were joking around. In-gong moved to the window of the office and gazed outside. He saw Felicia leaving the building.

'Take care of your body.'

In-gong gave a short prayer as he gazed at the back of Felicia, who was leaving the fourth base.

# Chapter 136

## Torrent #2

The vacancy left by Felicia was rather large. Since the beginning, Felicia had been the atmosphere maker in In-gong's groups, and now, she had left.

When Felicia left, Delia naturally went with her, while Caitlin and Seira had accompanied Felicia to Takar. Four people had suddenly gone away.

The first day after the four people left, the fourth base was pretty dull. However, the loneliness doubled on the second day. On the third day, In-gong felt Felicia's importance.

'I relied on her more than I thought.'

It was a spiritual, rather than material, dependence. He had never imagined their relationship would become this deep when he first encountered her at the Red Lightning tribe.

Looking back now, he was fortunate to meet Felicia.

In-gong had won up to now, but when he looked closely, there were several crises which had almost killed him several times. He had been on the verge of death from one strike in the battle against the barbarian king.

Since he had been brought into this world, he had been struggling repeatedly. In the meantime, he had been able to maintain his sanity thanks to having many good people around him. Thanks to them, he had been encouraged to fight and set his own goals.

If there had been no one around, the result would be quite different even with the power of Protagonist Correction and Conquest. Maybe he would have already lost his life.

"Why are you so despondent?"

Carack asked as he approached In-gong. In-gong watched Carack with moist eyes and said,

“No, I was just thinking that Carack is valuable. Don’t leave my side. We will always be together, right?”

He stood on tiptoe to touch Carack’s shoulder, only for Carack to move back in surprise.

“Why, are you drunk?”

“Hey, this is between us.”

In-gong looked up with moist eyes and winked. Then Carack suddenly puffed out and said with a determined face,

“Hu, if it is an order then it can’t be helped. And well, towards Prince, I too...”

Carack winked slightly. In-gong was startled and jumped back. He covered his upper body, which was naked due to training, with both his hands.

“S-stay away. You! This is somewhat questionable.”

Carack seemed unaware of Delia, Seira, Daphne and Karma, so maybe he had some dangerous tastes.

Carack chuckled at In-gong’s disgust.

“A joke, a joke. And don’t worry. I will always be loyal until I am a corpse. I will be with you until the end.”

Carack declared and raised his fist. They weren’t empty words, so In-gong understood Carack’s mindset. Carack had already proved his sincerity when they faced the Apostle of Death at Thunderdoom Fortress. Despite the fact that death had been in front of him, Carack said he had enjoyed it instead of expressing any grudges or fear. It was clearly something not just anyone could do.

“Rather, what are you doing alone?”

Carack interrupted while In-gong was in a sea of appreciation. In-gong shrugged and replied,

“Well, I was training. It isn’t my usual training.”

It was truly like In-gong said. He had spent most of the day grinding his experience. In-gong normally practiced reading and writing dwarf and dragon characters before going to sleep.

‘But it is interesting.’

The performance of this training was immediately visible. Moreover, there was a need for repetitive training. The skill itself was very easy to learn, but the skill level was always at one. Repetition was necessary to make it usable.

In-gong had been practicing mixing aura and magic power together. Carack made a tired expression.

“Ah, this person is truly determined, truly. Prince is destined to become stronger, but Prince is already very strong. It is the first time in my life that I’ve seen someone train like Prince.”

It wasn’t a joke. Even if someone else had gotten all the artifacts, they wouldn’t be as strong as In-gong was today.

While Carack was thinking this, In-gong looked at his arms. Something had flashed in his mind.

“Prince?”

Rather than answering Carack’s call, In-gong sharpened his aura like a blade, and his arm became bloody. Carack’s eyes widened as he saw In-gong lick the blood flowing along his arm.

“Ah, delicious. It is really delicious.”

Carack stepped back as In-gong laughed. It was a big exaggerated, but the green skin had turned pale.



“Prince, my eyes have been opened. Somehow, you laugh every time you face death.”

“Stop talking nonsense and try it once.”

In-gong took a wine glass from his inventory and poured in some blood for Carack. Carack grimaced, but he soon drank the blood and his eyes widened from surprise.

“What on earth is going on?”

It was really tasty. It didn’t have the salty taste of blood, but was somewhat sweet. Moreover, the fragrance was incredibly good.

In-gong healed his wound with recovery magic.

“There is a story about the gandharva being a fragrant species. Yesterday, I accidentally ate some of my sweat while practicing magic yesterday... No, it wasn’t a sweaty taste and instead gave off a sweet taste. So, I melted the magic power in my blood. The result is what you tasted.”

Carack blinked with a stunned face at In-gong’s words. He didn’t understand.

In-gong continued to speak,

“My other bodily fluids, which contain magic power, are sweet... The easiest liquid to dissolve is magic power since that is the essence of life.”

“Uh, then everything from Prince’s body is delicious?”

Not just blood, but saliva and sweat as well?

In-gong nodded at Carack’s question.

“Yes, but I have to melt down the magic power. It isn’t inherently like this, but I think it is pretty good. It might be because my magic power has become stronger due to the dragon heart.”

The blood of the gandharva wasn’t sweet. The gandharva, who could produce blood like In-gong, were rare in the Demon World.

“Now, you will never have to go hungry.”

In-gong nodded again at Carack’s words.

“Yes, so please look after me well. Take care of me until I am old.”

“I believe only in Prince.”

Carack smiled and handed the glass back to In-gong. He hesitated for a moment before opening his mouth carefully,

“Prince, that... someday. Are you going to visit the gandharva?”

In-gong’s mother’s side was the gandharva.

According to Carack’s investigation, the gandharva were being punished as a whole. All the gandharva, adults and children, with the exception of In-gong, were confined in a gandharva holy land within the Demon World.

Carack had failed to figure out the sin the gandharvas were guilty of, however, the species had been imprisoned for more than a decade. So, it wasn’t a small sin. However, it was likely to not be a sin which couldn’t be forgiven. Otherwise, the official children of the demon king would be eight people, not nine.

In-gong didn’t have sentimental feelings toward the gandharva. It was also true for In-gong’s mother. He had no relationship with them like what he had with Felicia and Caitlin. However, still, he did feel something. Was it due to In-gong becoming Shutra, or due to a resonance with his mother’s side?

In-gong gave a long sigh and replied,

“Perhaps. It would be best if I could obtain amnesty for them.”

Chris and 4th Queen Elaine had talked about the possibility of the gandharva being pardoned. If the two people said so, then it was highly likely it could happen.

“It won’t be easy.”

“Well, it isn’t impossible. I just have to build up my merits steadily.”

In-gong smiled widely, and Carack clenched his fists.

“Have strength.”

“Yes.”

After sharing a smile, In-gong felt awkward and moved his gaze away. He looked out the window where it was snowing.

“The year is almost over.”

Carack said with a warm expression. The Demon World was wide, so snow didn’t signify the end of the year. However, it was clear that the year was almost ending. Now, there was only a month until Year 513 would begin.

Year 513, this was when Knight Saga began.

In-gong looked toward the south.

What was Locke doing now? Was he studying to become a priest at the temple?

Locke had started his activities in the summer of Year 514. That was still more than a year away.

In-gong turned his attention back to the window. The snow was piling up.

As soon as she stepped out of the transportation formation tower, Felicia saw Silvan.

Silvan narrowed the distance to Felicia while spreading his arms and cried out,

“Felicia! Come into Oppa’s arms. Won’t you give me your sweet scent?”

Silvan spoke with moist eyes. The prince of the dark elves had a very handsome face, and his voice was sweet.

However, for Felicia, his voice was just creepy. Felicia quickly pushed Silvan away with

her arms.

“Ah, come on!”

She felt like she was going to die of embarrassment every time she saw him. Didn't he care about the eyes around them?

Felicia gasped with a blushing face while Sepira, Silvan's aide, spoke with a gentle smile.

“It is okay, Your Highness. The only ones around right now are crew members of the Black Flame Dragon. Everyone is familiar with him.”

“Is it really okay? And don't get used to this!”

Felicia shouted, but everyone just laughed. Of course, some of them were staring at her with pitiful expressions.

Felicia took a deep breath and covered her face with a fan. She fanned herself a few times before asking Silvan,

“Well, what did you find?”

Instead of answering the question, Silvan's shoulders sagged, and he made a sad expression. Before the puppy eyes, Felicia sighed eventually.

“Ah, really. I understand. Come over here.”

She gestured for Silvan to approach. Felicia hugged Silvan lightly, and he gave her a bright smile.

“Are you healthy?”

“I'm in good health. There were few risky incidents.”

Despite the situation with the barbarians, Felicia was rarely on the front lines. This was because in almost all the battles, she had fainted due to the use of the recovery magic.

“How has Silvan been?”

As Felicia asked with interest, Silvan laughed and pulled out the sword Amita made him.

“Huhu, there were a few powerful creatures, but none of them were my match. The sword which contains Amita’s skill and Felicia’s love...”

“Silence.”

Felicia closed Silvan’s mouth with silencing magic and turned to Sepira.

“Sepira?”

“There were many small battles but no major dangers. Princess seems to have gained a big merit this time. You stopped the barbarians?”

“Well, I didn’t do it alone. Shutra has the biggest merit.”

Felicias said with embarrassment while covering her face with a fan. Sepira looked very satisfied with Felicia’s reaction, which was very different from Silvan’s.

“Your Highness, we managed to find the site of a ruin. It is a ruin that I have seen for the first time. The strong scent of magic power could be felt at the entrance.”

“The scent of magic power?”

“Moreover, the characters found at the entrance are quite impressive. Maybe those characters... they might be the same as the ones found in Kaltein’s lair under Sun Lake.”

Sepira had accompanied In-gong’s party at that time, so it was a credible story.

“Indeed, you were right to call me, especially if there are unknown characters.”

Felicia’s eyes started to burn with passion as she heard the words. Then Silvan, who released the silencing magic, once again spread his arms wide open.

“Now, Felicia. Won’t you run off to a world of adventure with Oppa?”

“I’ll walk without running.”

Felicia answered bluntly, and Silvan laughed. He looked at the crew members in the vicinity and shouted,

“Now, let’s depart! Lift up the anchor and spread the sails!”

Silvan and the crew members ran toward the Black Flame Dragon. Felicia laughed as she saw their backs, and she moved forward slowly.

# Chapter 137

## Torrent #3

The ruin Silvan discovered was located deep inside a dense forest. Karamis, the area Silvan defended, was located to the south-east of the Demon World and was in contact with the Great Desert, one of the buffer zones to the Human World.

As the name suggested, the Great Desert was an incredibly large desert area. Despite its proximity to the desert, Karamis was a land rich in green vegetation due to the abnormal climate caused by the unique magic lines in the Demon World.

The Black Flame Dragon flew slowly for an hour or two before landing in an open area in the middle of the forest. The arrangement of the trees looked unnatural, like it was an artificially created landing point.

“Beyond that is the entrance to the ruins. It was so well hidden that I wouldn’t have found it if it wasn’t for a coincidence.”

Sepira said as she spread out the stairs for descending from the Black Flame Dragon. Silvan had already jumped down.

“How did you find it?”

Felicia asked while gazing at Silvan’s back.

Sepira laughed awkwardly.

“Someone was hit by a creature and fell to the entrance of the ruins. It was a deep well-like entrance.”

It was a fun story, but Felicia thought otherwise. She frowned and asked,

“That person, are they okay?”

“Yes, relatively. Their shoulders and neck are stiff though.”

Sepira laughed awkwardly again, and Felicia understood why Sepira's ears were red throughout the story.

'No, she didn't want to talk about this in the first place.'

When she thought about it, the story shouldn't be amusing, and any desire to laugh soon disappeared.

At that moment, the staircase was opened completely. Felicia was already jumping down and hurried to catch up with Silvan. Once she arrived at the entrance, she understood why Sepira emphasized it had been an accident.

The entrance to the ruin was hidden very well. No, if she had come across it, she would have thought it was just a deep pit.

A circular passage with a diameter of approximately 1.5 meters was drilled vertically akin to a well. The earth was bumpy, like it had been formed naturally, and clumps of bushes were surrounding the entrance.

Felicia knelt on the edge and looked inside the hole while sniffing it. There was a faint but clear scent. A place where magic power was concentrated gave off a good smell.

"It is true. There is the scent of magic power."

That wasn't all. There was a soft glow inside the deep hole, and the light was leaking from the inside.

As Felicia looked carefully, Silvan quickly held out a hand.

"Now, Felicia. Please embrace Oppa. I will jump in."

Silvan laughed while Felicia, who pulled back reflexively, cast a magic spell.

"Levitation."

Felicia dropped down slowly into the hole, while Silvan's shoulders sagged with disappointment. After falling almost 12 meters, a large passage was visible. It was a very old passage, but it gave off an artificial feel.



After the two of them went down, Sepira, Delia and the five crew members went down as well. Felicia preferred exploring ruins with a small, elite group since large numbers was just cumbersome.

There were two lights in the passage. One was a dim light which seemed to leak from deep inside, while the other was a pale light coming from little stones embedded in the ceiling.

It was very pretty, but it was hard to proceed with the exploration with this lighting. Felicia pulled out a stick with a brilliant light at the end of it which she had prepared in advance. They were in a large crypt which reminded her of the ones she had seen during the Red Lightning tribe subjugation.

Silvan's group had already explored the first floor, so they hurried on. After arriving at a place which was like a central hall, the unknown characters Sepira had mentioned were revealed for the first time.

"Indeed, they really are like the characters I saw. Maybe... the legend might be true?"

Felicia said as she looked at the letters carved on the high ceilings, floor and walls. The confused Sepira asked,

"Your Highness, the legend?"

As always, curious questions pleased Felicia, and she responded by spreading her knowledge.

"After going to Kaltein's lair last time, I did some research. However, I didn't have time to study a lot since the departure time was so tight."

It wasn't just Shutra who had investigated after returning to the Demon King's Palace.

Felicia looked at the characters and said again,

"In fact, this wasn't something I found out through research. It is a story I picked up while investigating ruins."

There was a question mark above Sepira's head. Felicia laughed and asked Sepira a

new question,

“Sepira, how much do you know about the history of the Demon King’s Palace?”

“I know it was created 500 years ago.”

This year was obviously Year 512.

Felicia stretched and said,

“Yes, only 500 years. Before that, the Era of Struggle was only approximately 3,000 years.”

The Era of Struggle referred to the time before the demon king, when all species had been at war with each other. The Demon World of that time was no different than what was beyond the limit line. Every day, a cruel war occurred.

“Then what type of civilization was there in the old days?”

Before the Era of Struggle—

The distant past before the Thunderdoom Fortress was built...

“We don’t know. No matter how far back the records of the dark elves go, it is only up to 6,000~7,000 years. It isn’t an exaggeration to say we don’t know much about the civilizations and how the species lived before that time.”

7,000 years was indeed a long time for the dark elves. Sepira counted in her head for a while before her long ears extended.

“Your Highness, if it was 7,000 years ago... wouldn’t it have been hard to have a proper civilization?”

The dark elves had also been different 7,000 years ago, and they had been primitive in many ways.

Felicia nodded.

“The majority of people think like that. They think it was a time without a proper

country, where the species just fought in tribal units. But I don't think so. If there hadn't been a flourishing civilization in those days, we shouldn't be able to find their traces after they have long since perished."

It was much older than 7,000 years ago. Maybe it was a past that went back even more years.

"We call this legend the indigenous species. Although there is little evidence, I think it makes sense."

Felicia said with a smile. Sepira looked at the characters engraved on the floor.

"Your Highness, do these characters belong to the indigenous species?"

"Let's see, should we find out from now on?"

Felicia responded with a laugh.

From the north, he headed to the south.

His steps were slow but steady.

Day and night passed, until he reached a place where the greenery was thick—a land called Karamis in the Demon World.

Felicia finished her survey of the first floor and headed to the second underground floor. The second floor was significantly different from the first floor. As the crypt continued, spaces appeared which could be thought of as rooms, but they had no special structure.

The smell of magic power leaking from deep within the dungeon became stronger, and the ceiling light was brighter than the first floor's.

Like the first floor, the second floor had a simple structure, so the exploration time was quick.

Felicia headed toward the third floor.

He stepped into Karamis, and his footsteps became a little bit faster.

The structure of the third floor was simpler than the second floor's. It was just a large room with high ceilings and stairs leading to the fourth floor.

The ceiling light became brighter and the scent of magic power stronger.

Felicia was deep in thought as she copied all the characters on the wall.

It had been quite a while since they entered the ruin. Even if they hurried, it would be completely dark by the time they left the ruin.

So, it would be good to return to a safe place on the second floor and take a break.

However, there was still a little bit more time. Every time they went down the stairs, the structure became simpler.

They could continue going downward.

Silvan said he would follow Felicia's will as always. After a short moment of agonizing, Felicia descended the stairs leading to the fourth underground floor.

It was late at night.

Silvan's crew members, who were guarding the entrance of the ruin, set up fires and strengthened the perimeter.

Strong magic power had a strong attraction for creatures. They didn't know if the magic power leaking from the entrance of the ruins would tempt any creatures.

Since Silvan and Sepira were away, the first officer, Tirion, was in charge of security. He watched the darkness with a cigarette in his mouth. Then the sound of rustling disturbed his ears.

Tirion turned his eyes toward the sound.

The third and fourth floors were completely different. It was clearly a more complex space than the first floor. The ruin was enormous.

Why did this site exist? And why was there nothing in such a huge space? Despite the rich magic power, even the smallest creature couldn't be seen.

Thanks to the light from the ceiling, the inside of the ruin was like daylight, and Felicia was determined to go deeper.

The clouds hid the moon, and in the darkness, he moved forward. There were clear signs of his passing.

All those who guarded the entrance to the ruin had disappeared.

The process by which the crew members died had been different, but the result was the same. Tirion's body was deprived of life and his body crushed.

Everything in his path turned to dust. He took a step forward. Recalling the memories from 1,000 years ago, He took a deep breath, and the fragrance of magic power hit his nose.

"Drain."

The man said.

He ordered it as the Famine Knight.

The ceiling light weakened momentarily.

Felicia looked up at the ceiling reflexively.

Silvan turned around. His uncovered left eye narrowed as he stared in a certain direction.

The air had changed. It was something which couldn't be expressed.

Felicia sensed it as well. It was a gut instinct.

Someone was approaching from afar.

“Shutra.”

Felicia looked at the Tears of a Dark Elf on her finger as darkness swallowed up the ruin.

In-gong opened his eyes. He raised his upper body, gasping for air like he'd had a nightmare. He looked reflexively at the Tears of a Dark Elf hanging on his neck and stood up suddenly.

The purple Tears of a Dark Elf had lost its light. There was no glimmer left at all.

Why?

In-gong didn't think any further and called out to White Eagle.

Coincidence and inevitability—

They were a tangled mess.

The Death Knight looked toward the south.

The War Knight felt the tide of conflict.

Too far away...

There wasn't much time.

The Famine Knight raised his foot at the entrance of the ruin.

He took a step inside.

# Chapter 138

## Opening

In-gong's mind was blank. Before it recovered, In-gong was already crossing the air on White Eagle.

The wind blew around him, and just like the saying, he flew faster than the wind.

Maybe he was too hasty. In-gong felt anxious after seeing the Tears of a Dark Elf, but it was just the light which had been lost. There was a possibility that one of its feature was simply broken.

However, he couldn't not consider it. Felicia was far away, so it was better for him to waste time going there, than to delay. No, it was better for In-gong to go there in vain, than for Felicia to be in a crisis.

In-gong didn't inform Vandal. He simply shouted to Carack that Felicia was in danger.

The distance between the fourth base and Takar was considerable. If he marched in the normal manner, it would take around four days. Even if it was a hard march, it would take two days. However, that speed was when he was moving with soldiers.

In-gong didn't have anyone with him. Moreover, he was pouring his power into White Eagle; the magic from the dragon heart increased White Eagle's speed. If he maintained this speed, he would be able to reach Takar in a few hours. It was tremendous speed.

However, In-gong felt impatient. He needed too much time. A few hours was too long.

'A little bit faster, a little bit faster!'

Aura was added to the magic power, while White Eagle moved in the darkness.



The Famine Knight entered the ruin. Smoke filled the passageway. The dim light from the ceiling faded, and the faint scent of magic power disappeared completely.

The Famine Knight felt a funny sense of nostalgia at the scent. He remembered things from 1,000 years ago and 10,000 years ago. It felt like just yesterday that he was walking through this ruin.

Gerard's memory also recognized the Black Flame Dragon, the treasure of the dark elves. However, he had spent 20 years in the lycanthrope prison. Therefore, he didn't know the current owner of the Black Flame Dragon. He just guessed that it was one of the kings of the dark elves.

It didn't matter if the owner was someone Gerard knew or if they were from a new generation. In the first place, the encounter with the dark elves was a coincidence. His purpose was on the lowest floor.

Of course, he didn't plan to miss it. The magic power flowing through the royal dark elves were like a light wine.

The Famine Knight didn't rush. He advanced while devouring the ruin's magic power.

Felicia looked up at the ceiling. The light from the ceiling shone again. However, it was fainter than before and blinked occasionally. Something strange had obviously occurred.

Felicia thought about it as calmly as possible. The sudden change was due to something they had done or an external factor.

Nothing had happened when their group came to the fourth floor, and they hadn't touched anything. Therefore, there must be an external factor. She wondered what had happened. What was this unbearably ominous feeling?

Felicia grasped Silvan's hand. It was a firm hand without any shaking.

Silvan smiled at Felicia before looking up at the ceiling. No, he seemed to be looking beyond it.

There was a problem above ground, not underground. It was a hunch, but he also had some evidence to prove it. Silvan stared down at his arm. He had a magic device to track the location of the Black Flame Dragon. The arrow of light inside the gem was supposed to point toward the place where the Black Flame Dragon was, however, there was currently no light. If so, it was either one of two options:

The Black Flame Dragon had been destroyed, or his connection was blocked.

Silvan thought about the crew members of the Black Flame Dragon. Either way, it was highly likely something abnormal had happened to his crew members. Normally, Silvan would already be climbing the stairs up to the ground. However, Felicia was in this place. That fact made him calm.

“It is approaching.”

Silvan said quickly. He felt something ominous approaching in the darkness.

Felicia breathed roughly. Although Silvan was relatively ignorant about magic, he was still a prince of the dark elves. He instinctively noticed that the scent of magic power was changing. The spirits around them were scared.

Silvan watched the stairs. Instead of raising his aura, he took Felicia’s hand again, and he deliberately gave an exaggerated smile.

“Don’t worry. I, your Oppa, is here.”

Felicia laughed awkwardly. She swallowed her dry saliva repeatedly and called upon the wind spirit.

Right now, she didn’t want to go to the floors above, so she sent the wind spirit up.

The ruin of the indigenous species boasted a vast size. The ruin, which started in the forest of Karamis, reached the Great Desert.

The Famine Knight crossed the first floor. He didn’t leave anything behind in the place he passed. The ceiling was depleted of magic power and lost its light, making the passage go dark.

He felt wind coming from in front of him. The Famine Knight laughed happily. This was because it wasn't a natural wind.

The Famine Knight lifted a hand, and the hungry power of Famine didn't let the wind blow.

The wind spirit had been extinguished. The presence was still coming closer.

It was clear that there was an external problem. Felicia took a deep breath. The spirit had vanished and horror filled her chest.

Silvan looked around. The passage on the fourth floor was rather large because the size of the ruin grew every time they descended a floor. The height of the ceiling seemed to be approximately six to seven meters.

Silvan made a decision. Instead of going to meet the enemy, he decided to wait. The ruin was vast. Considering the speed at which the ominous presence was approaching, it would take a considerable amount of time to reach this place.

"Felicia."

Silvan called out with an affectionate voice. Felicia straightened and nodded. The two people didn't say anything, but they had reached the same conclusion.

A battle of waiting was the specialty of a magician. She would convert the fourth floor's stairs into a trap.

The ceiling light became weaker. The ominous presence was now much closer.

Time passed. It was too slow for some people and too fast for others.

Felicia swallowed her saliva. The ominous presence was like a snake that tightened around her neck. Her breathing was rough as she looked at the magic she had prepared. The stairs to the fourth floor was now a magical fortress.

She wondered how much time had passed. Her back was moist with sweat. It was clear that at least one hour had passed, maybe even more.

Felicia closed her eyes tightly and restored her breathing. She had been with Shutra for several months and experienced many things, but she had never been so nervous. As time went by, it seemed like she would die.

“It is coming.”

Silvan said quickly. Felicia quickly opened her eyes and stepped back in dismay. Sepira and Delia stood on either side of Felicia, while the five crew members took out their weapons and watched the stairs.

Silvan pulled out Amita’s sword as well. His aura glowed as he stared at the ceiling. It was obvious the presence was on the third floor.

Now, it was coming down. This was the moment they would face the ominous presence.

Everyone stared at the stairs. The presence was approaching them. Silvan shouted. His shout was like a thunderbolt as he stared at the ceiling.

“Avoid it!”

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

The loud explosion swallowed up Silvan’s cry. The ceiling collapsed and rocks hit the floor.

Delia grabbed Felicia’s waist and pulled her back. Sepira turned hurriedly toward the sound. Something was seen in the darkness.

It spread like a mist. At the same time, the dark spirit at the center moved like lightning. He naturally twisted the neck of a crew member who had been knocked down by a rock.

The crew member couldn’t even scream. He died up without a sound. Then the heart of the second crew member was crushed. Silvan triggered his aura while Felicia

screamed.

“Gerard!”

He was the one Felicia had seen in the lycanthrope territory. The one who had forced Chris and Caitlin, as well as Shutra, to the brink of death!

The Famine Knight, formerly called Gerard, smiled. The black energy surrounding his body absorbed the magic power of the ruin. The ceiling lost its light, and the floor was deprived of its vitality. It was dry and cracked just because the Famine Knight was standing on it. The ceiling the Famine Knight destroyed was turned to dust.

The Famine Knight kicked off from the ground, with the explosive movement distinctive to Divine Beast Authority. The passage was wide, but the distance between them narrowed, and the Famine Knight arrived in front of Sepira.

Sepira swung her sword reflexively. The Famine Knight moved along the trajectory of Sepira’s sword, then he turned and grabbed Sepira’s wrist.

‘Drain.’

The moment the Famine Knight ordered it, Sepira’s wrist disappeared. At the same time, Silvan wielded his sword. He cut Sepira’s arm off cleanly.

Sepira groaned from the sharp pain. Blood spurted from Sepira’s arm, while the cut wrist held by the Famine Knight dried up and became dust.

The Famine Knight laughed.

Did Silvan see it? Or did he just feel it?

Either way, Silvan’s aura exploded. It was an act to create a gap. Silvan pushed Sepira away with his feet and watched the Famine Knight. He wielded his sword once again. It cut through the atmosphere sharply.

The Famine Knight moved backward smoothly like he was sliding over the ground. Gerard’s memories revealed that Silvan was as strong as Chris. Therefore, he felt pleased. He pushed off from the ground while using the power of Famine!

“Silvan!”

Felicia screamed desperately. Silvan triggered aura around his whole body, and the aura barrier opposed the power of Famine. Once again, Silvan’s sword moved like lightning.

It was fast and accurate.

However, Gerard was extremely strong. He was once the strongest among the lycanthropes, and he read all of Silvan’s movements. Almost all the sword trajectories were crushed before they even started.

Silvan was gasping for air. In order to stop the power of Famine, he continued pouring aura into his aura barrier. It seemed like his aura would be depleted before his stamina.

“Captain!”

The remaining three crew members rushed in at the same time. Silvan wanted to tell them not to come, but he was out of breath. He had barely squeezed out his voice when a thunderous sound was heard.

Kwang kwang kwang!

There were three roars, and the hearts of the three crew members were crushed. Their bodies fell to the ground, and their remaining health was lost to the power of Famine.

Silvan let out a loud sound. He was lost in his rage for a moment, then the Famine Knight’s palm reached Silvan’s chest. It wasn’t a simple attack.

Arang—

A technique of Divine Beast Authority which destroyed the enemy from the inside.

Aura exploded inside Silvan’s body, and the blue aura protecting Silvan’s body became faint.

Silvan was thrown into the air, then he crashed down to the ground, coughing up blood.

The Famine Knight admired Silvan. He had a remarkably disciplined body. While the lycanthropes were unmatched in toughness, the fragile elves shouldn't be able to endure Arang with their bodies.

The Famine Knight stared at Silvan with fascinated eyes. Silvan coughed up blood again but somehow managed to stand up.

Sepira ran up to Silvan. At the same time, Felicia moved. She couldn't watch anymore.

She poured all the magic she had set up on the stairs onto the Famine Knight. The Famine Knight felt the flow of magic power. With the power of Famine which swallowed everything, he set up a barrier and walked between the flow.

The black darkness broke through the dazzling magic light, and the power of Famine devoured the magic. He twisted the trajectory of the magic.

It only took a few seconds.

The Famine Knight escaped from the magic and stood before Felicia. Delia invoked dozens of red lights from Amita's armour and created a force field. Amita's armour was fine, but Delia wasn't. It felt like she had been hit by a dump truck.

The Famine Knight looked at Felicia, then Gerard remembered.

She was the woman who had been with the Conquest Knight.

Was it coincidental or inevitable?

The Famine Knight reached out his hand.

Felicia waved her hand reflexively. It was a struggle to say anything. In the first place, she wasn't a match for this opponent. The Famine Knight avoided Felicia's attack like it was a joke and touched Felicia's chest. It looked like a very mild blow, but it wasn't. The armour Felicia wore took the blow and distorted. Due to her chest piece being crushed, Felicia had trouble breathing.

The Famine Knight touched Felicia's cheek. Rather than draining her with the power of Famine, he wanted to tear her apart.

It would be good to throw her decapitated head to the hateful Conquest Knight.

The Famine Knight kicked Felicia's abdomen once again, and Felicia made a hissing sound. She was barely able to maintain consciousness, so it was impossible for her to cast a spell.

Silvan raised his body. The Famine Knight spread out the power of Famine to provoke them.

Everyone moved as they thought of Famine. Sepira moved to save Delia just before the power of Famine reached her. Despite still coughing up blood, Silvan jumped in front of the power of Famine and defended using his aura. He then used the shortest distance to reach Felicia.

The Famine Knight had expected it and stretched out a hand toward the expected orbit. Silvan twisted his body desperately but couldn't flee perfectly. The Famine Knight struck Silvan's waist, and his aura was removed. Then the power of Famine rushed like a vulture toward Silvan.

However, Silvan pushed against the ground. He broke through the power of Famine and reached Felicia.

Felicia gasped as she looked at Silvan, but Silvan smiled at Felicia. He smiled despite the bloody state of his body.

'No.'

Sepira thought as she held Delia.

It was the same for Felicia. Even though she couldn't breathe properly, she tried to somehow speak.

'No, you can't do that. There must be another way. There had to be something more!'

However, Silvan didn't listen. It was unreasonable. His flow of aura was ruined by Arang, and there wasn't enough time to correct the aura. At this very moment, the



power of Famine was stretching toward him and Felicia.

So, this was the only way. No other way existed.

Silvan reached out to Felicia's forehead and invoked a hidden magic spell. He forcefully got her permission to act in the state of emergency.

The Famine Knight only cared about Felicia, so Silvan couldn't wait any longer and reached out a hand. However, Gerard remembered something, and he ordered the Famine Knight to retreat straight away.

'Why?'

'What was the reason?'

Questions were created. During that time, Felicia screamed. Silvan smiled at Felicia as he raised a hand to his right eye.

Gerard's warning reached its peak, and the Famine Knight strengthened the power of Famine reflexively. Sepira and Delia cried out Silvan's name.

At that moment, tears flowed down endlessly from Felicia's eyes.

Silvan took off his eyepatch.

He opened up the power of the fairy.

# Chapter 139

## Opening #2

It was like an explosion. It was comparable to opening a door which had been blocked to its limit.

Fairy...

It was a blessing from the first fairy king as well as a curse.

Those born with the fairy had enormous magic power which was different from ordinary dark elves. They were able to turn all their natural strength into magic power. Even incompatible powers such as magic and aura would become complete under the control of the fairy.

Additionally, it didn't stop.

The owner of the fairy could use the magic power which also existed in the atmosphere of the Demon World. It was theoretical, but if they exerted the fairy's power to its limits, it was possible to have infinite power.

The first fairy king used the power of the fairy to establish a kingdom. Even though there were no signs of it left, the dark elves were able to stand on their own feet due to the kingdom of the fairies.

So, the fairy was a blessing. However, at the same time, it was also a curse. With the exception of the first fairy king, the fairy's owner didn't have complete control over the power.

Except for the first fairy king, all the owners of the fairy lost their lives due to excessive abuse of power. It was because once the magic power was exhausted, it would start to drain the power necessary to sustain its life.

During childhood, the fairy's magic power was somewhat weak, so it was possible to reign it in. However, there were no method after becoming an adult. Opening up the

fairy in one fight would be like consuming the owner's their life.

Silvan was born with the fairy.

Ever since his childhood mistake in opening up the fairy, he had never unlocked the seal on the fairy again. Unlike the other dark elves, Silvan didn't learn magic and focused on aura and swordsmanship instead to stay as far away from the fairy as possible.

Silvan's fairy, which had been sealed for many years, shone with a golden radiance as he unleashed its strong and brilliant power.

Successive explosions followed. They weren't caused by magic but an explosion of magic power, and that power was beyond imagination.

The Famine Knight backed away hurriedly and used the power of Famine. Silvan inserted magic power into Amita's sword while staring at the Famine Knight, and a blade of golden light rose above the sword like a lightning bolt.

Felicia howled as Silvan rushed toward the Famine Knight. The Famine Knight blocked Silvan's charge with the power of Famine, but Silvan's magic power is too great. It was impossible to deplete all of it, even with the power of Famine.

"Sepira!"

Silvan shouted in pain. Sepira immediately understood what he meant. She ignored the blurry vision caused by her tears and ran toward Felicia. Delia was also the same.

Silvan drove back the Famine Knight, and lightning spread everywhere. His eyes were shining a brilliant gold.

Delia hastily pulled off the heavily dented chest armour which was interfering with Felicia's breathing. Felicia breathed out reflexively, then Sepira hugged her forcefully.

Felicia understood. She knew what Sepira wanted to do, and Sepira didn't release Felicia. She carried Felicia and ran forward without looking back.

"Silvan! Silvan!"

Felicia screamed, but Silvan didn't look at Felicia. Instead of controlling the fairy's power, he released it freely. His aura, which had been broken by Arang, was forcibly converted to magic power and caused another round. In the end, his life force was being exhausted.

It was all to protect Felicia. In order to save her, he had to defeat the monster before him!

Kwa kwang!

Lightning struck and the sound of thunder filled the passage. The power of Famine couldn't absorb the magic power and split apart.

Silvan coughed up blood. The Famine Knight triggered his aura, but the Famine Knight's strength was still lacking. In the end, he had to deal with Silvan by using the power of Gerard, who was called the strongest among the lycanthropes.

The Famine Knight used Gerard's memories of Divine Beast Authority. Silvan swung his giant sword made of magic power and attacked the Famine Knight. A stray blow tore the ceiling apart.

The explosions continued in succession. At that time, Sepira reached the stairs, and Felicia finally exclaimed,

"Silvan!"

There was no reply to her heartbreaking scream. Sepira jumped the stairs and reached the third floor. It was just a large room, so she could spot the stairs leading to the second floor easily.

The entire ruin seemed to be in shock as rubble fell from the ceiling.

Sepira continued to run, while Felicia's struggle became weaker. Harsh breathing filled the passage. How much time had passed since they started running away? At best, it was a dozen or so seconds, maybe not even be one minute.

Sepira, who had run to the second floor, looked back, and Delia swallowed a scream as she illuminated their surroundings with magic.

An ominous darkness was coming from far away. At the same time, there was also a dazzling golden light.

Part of the ruin had collapsed, and a huge gold light pierced through the ceiling, causing a vibration.

It was a huge magic power. However, the strength behind that magic power meant Silvan's life force was numbered.

Sepira clenched her fists as she ran. Delia swallowed back her tears as well. Her heart felt like it was going to burst, and her breathing felt choked.

Time passed, maybe 20 minutes or more.

They finally reached the stairs to the first floor. Sepira climbed the stairs painfully, followed by Delia. The horrible nightmare was still coming.

Every time there was a dreadful roar, it sounded much closer, and the golden colour flashed in the darkness.

Sepira moved to climb to the first floor. At that moment, Delia covered Sepira. The two people rolled to the ground with Felicia as the staircase collapsed.

The stairs connecting the first and second floors had collapsed. Felicia looked through the hole caused by the collapse. She could see the back of Silvan's shoulders drooping down. Beyond that, there was a black spot.

It had been 20 minutes since he opened up the fairy. Silvan was half-dead, and the Famine Knight was also suffering from excruciating injuries, but he was still standing.

In the past, Gerard would already be out of combat. However, the current Famine Knight was a doll controlled by Famine but had Gerard's memories. Gerard could only move due to the power of Famine.

It wasn't good. The Famine Knight couldn't absorb the enormous magic power of the fairy all at once, but it was possible to devour it slowly. If Silvan hadn't been hit by Arang or if he was a powerful magician, the story might have been different. However, it was meaningless to think about that now.

The Famine Knight was a dark werewolf, and black smoke filled up the empty spots in his body.

The Famine Knight kicked off from the ground. Then Silvan—instead of striking the Famine Knight with his sword, he caused a huge magical vortex.

However, it was insignificant.

The memory of Gerard laughed. In the old days, he had been the strongest of the lycanthropes and known for his footwork. He used Divine Beast Authority's explosive power and maneuvered at high speed to avoid Silvan's magic vortex. Gerard stretched out just as Silvan caused another explosion.

Magic power and aura collided. Although Silvan instinctively created a shield of magic power to block it, he was still pushed back. Thrown back more than a dozen metres, he landed, spread out on top of the collapsed staircase.

The Famine Knight sighed with a satisfied expression, then he ridiculed the scene which was occurring in front of him.

Felicia had jumped toward Silvan. She poured her magic power desperately into the dying Silvan. At the same time, she cast various recovery magic and defense spells.

It was stupid. The Famine Knight devoured everything, and that's why he knew. The fairy was already in an unstoppable state. She could wrap the injuries of Silvan's body with recovery magic, but she couldn't prevent magic power from leaking.

It was pitiful.

The Famine Knight didn't know whether it was the Famine Knight's memory or Gerard's, but he sneered with ridicule and took a step forward. Despite this, the damage to the Famine Knight wasn't small. So, he had to absorb the last of Silvan's power.

Felicia cast her magic desperately. She pulled Silvan's head onto her lap and used all the recovery magic she knew. However, it was useless. She was sensitive to the flow of magic power, so she knew Silvan had almost no magic power remaining.

Silvan's hands trembled. Instead of grabbing Felicia's hand, he pointed toward the air.

Somehow, he squeezed out magic power to stop the Famine Knight.

Felicia wanted to yell out, 'Idiot!', however, she held back her curses since he had already done it.

Felicia would rather have the fairy herself. Then she would be able to save Silvan. Maybe she would even be able to create a better situation.

The Famine Knight approached. Sepira and Delia were prepared to die as they stood before Felicia. Not giving up on the situation, Felicia glared straight ahead as she hugged Silvan's head. The Famine Knight took a step forward.

Then right at that moment...!

The Tears of a Dark Elf shone brilliantly from Felicia's finger. Why was it shining now when it had been silent so far?

It was simple. Due to the battle between Silvan and the Famine Knight, the ruin had collapsed. So, the flow of magic power was no longer blocked at the entrance by the power of Famine and was spreading elsewhere.

...And another one—

The most important reason.

Felicia dragged Silvan to her. She was both crying and laughing as she called out loudly,

“Shutra!”

Kwaaaaaang!

There was a response to her call. It poured down from the sky as Ascalon, the great weapon from the dragon slayer series.

It penetrated the ruin, breaking through the ceiling of the first floor and into the second floor.

The Famine Knight raised his head as the pair of Tears of a Dark Elf shone in the dark passage. A pair of white and black shields painted a green trail. Shutra flew like a flash

and stood before Felicia.

He had arrived.

Divine Sura Authority and a new wind...

It was faster than the wind.

Silvan hadn't opened up his fairy in vain. Shutra had managed to make it in time. He opened his eyes as he glanced at the dark elves.

The Famine Knight was before him, and the power of Famine was fired at him. It was like a black sword.

In-gong glared at the power of Famine. He also activated the power of Conquest and shouted,

"Below the King's Flag!"

The flag of light formed in In-gong's hand and was stuck into the ground. At that moment, the white power of Conquest filled the ruins. The power of Famine was pushed out, and Shutra's white aura rose like a flame.

The Famine Knight was confused. He couldn't understand it. It wasn't just due to the sudden appearance.

The Famine Knight had faced the Conquest Knight only a few months ago, yet the power of the Conquest Knight was now significantly different. It was so strong that it couldn't even be compared to the last time.

Why? What was this?

However, unlike the Famine Knight, In-gong wasn't confused. Due to the dreaded situation, he had sped here like a storm, but he soon forgot his tiredness.

Felicia was crying, and Silvan was half-dead.

In-gong activated his quad-core. The dragon blood woke up, and Earth Quaker gave a low growl.



Famine Knight...

There wouldn't be a third time. It was time to settle this.

'Conquer.'

The white woman's voice was heard with anger filling her voice.

Then In-gong formed a fist.

He invoked his power.

# Chapter 140

## Conquest

In-gong ran like the wind. He became a gale which crossed the space.

Aura and magic power rose from his dragon heart at the same time. The quad-core, created by adding magic power to the auras from the Moonlight Core, pure aura heart and the dragon heart, proved terrifying.

The Famine Knight was confused and missed In-gong's movement. By the time the Famine Knight recovered his spirit, In-gong was already at his side.

The left side of Gerard's body hadn't remained intact. Therefore, his reaction was slow. Using Gerard's memory, he defended reflexively, but In-gong's attack was quicker than that.

In-gong's power exploded outwards. The white aura burst, and the Famine Knight was pushed sideways. Moreover, that wasn't the end. The Famine Knight saw the white aura flying toward him. It was the Lightning technique of Divine Sura Authority.

Kwakakakang!

It was like a lightning strike. No, it was already lightning. The divine power from the last flame tore into the left side of the Famine Knight. The Famine Knight couldn't withstand it and screamed. It was an eerie feeling, like his left half was being torn apart!

"Kuaaah!"

The Famine Knight howled like a beast. He tried to spread the power of Famine in every direction and widened the distance between him and In-gong. The divine nature of the power made it even more painful.

In-gong didn't approach the Famine Knight carelessly. He understood it the moment he hit the Famine Knight with Lightning—

He understood the reason why Silvan was dying, and the feat he had accomplished. The power of Famine was filling the left half of the Famine Knight's body, meaning it wasn't a real body. Silvan had used the fairy. It was clear he had used this power against the Famine Knight.

The final boss on the 'Day of Massacre' had always been Silvan. He had the fairy. In Knight Saga, he was the child of the demon king with the strongest magic power.

Silvan had protected Felicia. He had lasted until In-gong managed to arrive, and now, Silvan was dying.

In-gong's anger flared. He remembered the Famine Knight laughing in front of Felicia, then he remembered how happy Silvan was to receive Amita's sword. In-gong knew without even looking—Silvan had opened the fairy without any hesitation in order to defend Felicia, even though he had known it would lead to his death!

In-gong's anger exploded, and the white and green aura grew even bigger.

The Famine Knight was unable to move his hands or feet, and it wasn't just due to embarrassment. He was close to suffering from irreversible injuries.

It was just for a moment, but it was overwhelming. The existence before his eyes was the Conquest Knight! Don't make him laugh!

The Famine Knight was in denial. He couldn't admit it at all.

Gerard's memories helped him regain his posture, then the Famine Knight rushed toward In-gong.

The two attacks collided. There were more than a dozen flashes in an instant. A white and black aura collided as the entire ruin shook.

The Famine Knight was once again confused. The presence before him, the Conquest Knight, had less martial art ability than Silvan. However, he was more difficult to deal with. It wasn't simply a difference in momentum.

Gerard's memory knew why, and the reason was simple.

In-gong knew much more about Divine Beast Authority than Silvan. He was used to dealing with Divine Beast Authority.

Divine Beast Authority was the foundation of In-gong's Divine Sura Authority. He had accumulated battle experience with Divine Beast Authority through sparring with Caitlin.

It would have been a different story if the Famine Knight was in his usual state before Silvan opened the fairy. However, the Famine Knight had now lost their left and right sides. Despite Gerard's memories as the strongest lycanthrope, it was unreasonable for him to exert his full capabilities.

Kwa kwang!

A howl burst from the chest of the Famine Knight. Once again, there was the power of an explosion, and the Famine Knight groaned in protest. It wasn't the same Divine Beast Authority. In-gong's explosion surpassed that of Divine Beast Authority. Gerard remembered that the power of Divine Sura Authority was superior to Divine Beast Authority, but the Famine Knight didn't understand this fact immediately.

There was a gap. The Famine Knight wasn't Gerard. He just had Gerard's memories. The gap between the two of them widened dramatically, causing a huge weakness.

The Famine Knight continued to move his hands and feet. As the slugfest continued, more and more of In-gong's attacks hit.

The power of Famine couldn't drain In-gong's aura. The power of Conquest, surging from the king's flag, offset the power of Famine. It didn't stop there and also suppressed the left and right sides which were made up of the power of Famine.

The Famine Knight used Arang. In-gong used Arang like a mirror and blocked it. Just in regards to the perfection of the techniques, Gerard's memories were still superior, but In-gong filled the gap with a huge amount of aura.

At that moment, the Famine Knight twisted and struck In-gong's chest. It was a close range attack of Divine Beast Authority.

In-gong's body shook as something pierced through it like a drill. However, the destruction the Famine Knight had expected didn't happen. In-gong endured the

power, and the result was something that Gerard's memories couldn't imagine.

[Greedy Wolf Lv1 has been learnt.]

In-gong struck the Famine Knight's chest with Greedy Wolf. A hole formed in the black smoke which made up the Famine Knight's left side. The Famine Knight staggered, and In-gong gritted his teeth. In-gong was someone who had endured a monstrous attack from Vandal. He swallowed back the pain Greedy Wolf caused him and stretched out his fist again. In-gong placed his right hand in the hole in the Famine Knight's chest and the power of Conquest exploded!

Kwang!

The left half of the Famine Knight was scattered instantly. The black smoke scattered everywhere, and In-gong kicked the Famine Knight. The current passage was moderately wide, but the body of the Famine Knight struck a wall and made a loud noise.

Then In-gong held him up there with Telekinesis. When the Famine Knight was fixed to the wall, White Eagle and Black Eagle, which had been waiting for this moment, rushed to the Famine Knight!

Kwakang!

They were like meteors. Green light emitted from the black and white shields, turning Gerard's body into a ragdoll. His body was shattered and the limbs cut off.

"Kuaaaak!"

The Famine Knight shrieked with pain. At that moment, the power of Famine exploded. The power of Famine was being forced out because the Famine Knight was giving up on Gerard's body. The darkness rose like an angry flame and swallowed In-gong!

"Shutra!"

Felicia screamed. At the same time, Famine shouted. He hated In-gong.

“Drain! Destroy him!”

It was a terrible feeling. A terrible affection.

The power of Famine bit at In-gong, then the power of Conquest tried to protect In-gong, and Famine felt hostility.

At that moment, Famine could no longer tolerate it. He poured out his emotions toward Conquest, the white woman with red and blue eyes. Famine was close to screaming.

Why? Why did she block them? Why was she fighting against her own?

Famine didn't know. He couldn't understand it.

Why did she betray them and go on the opposite side?

Conquest, War, Death and Famine... The four riders of destruction— They were presences that longed for the end of the world.

However, that wasn't the case now. Conquest had betrayed the rest. As the ruler, she should be at the forefront of the riders, so the remaining three were hostile toward her. What was the cause? Did the fight 1,000 years ago change her? Did the fight from that time destroy her?

The power of Famine became even stronger, and he used his emotions as fuel. It seemed like he would soon destroy In-gong. However, Conquest didn't back down. In the midst of the darkness, the white aura shone even brighter.

In-gong finally understood.

The woman with one red and one blue eye...

Conquest—

She didn't want it anymore. She didn't want the end of civilization, the extermination of all life. Despite being born for destruction, she longed to maintain the world. It was her dream. It was why she chose a knight who didn't want destruction like the other riders. Far from conquering In-gong, her desire was for In-gong to conquer her.

[The level of Conquest has risen.]

[The level of Conquest Knight has risen.]

[The level of The King's Knights has risen.]

[The level of Conquest Knight has risen.]

The voice rang in his ears. From the deep depths of In-gong's soul, the white woman smiled sadly.

In-gong formed a fist. The armour of the elder dragons, the riders' enemies, gave strength to In-gong. The power of Conquest which radiated from Earth Quaker, which was growling furiously, destroyed the darkness of Famine.

The power of Famine was scattered...

And the power of Conquest took its place.

In-gong, the person who had been born as a true Conquest Knight, looked down while he was enveloped by a white light. He stepped forward as he gazed at the power of Famine which remained in the caricature of Gerard.

The Famine Knight hurled curses at In-gong. He spewed out from Gerard's memories of hatred. In-gong received all the hatred and struck the final blow toward the Famine Knight's chest.

Gerard's body was completely destroyed. Famine lost its container and was sent away, and the ominous feeling which filled the ruin was washed clean.

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

In-gong heard the voice three times, but he couldn't rest yet. He turned and looked at Felicia and Silvan. Felicia was still crying, and tears were flowing endlessly down her cheeks.

"Save him. Save him, Shutra."

Felicia begged while holding Silvan's head, but it was just a desperate plea. Even Felicia, a magician, couldn't think of a way to save Silvan. She was forced to watch Silvan die.

In-gong approached Felicia, then he saw Silvan smiling. He had a really satisfied smile on his face.

Felicia was saved. She had survived. Silvan could rest now. As Felicia was now secured, Silvan tried to let go of his string of life.

However, In-gong didn't tolerate it. He stretched out his hand toward the fairy inside Silvan.

In-gong used the power of Conquest.



# Chapter 141

## Conquest #2

In Knight Saga, Silvan and the fairy hadn't been on In-gong's side.

However, the battle with Silvan on the 'Day of Massacre' had been so impressive that In-gong remembered the general characteristics. Silvan's magic power had been exhausted, and he died.

In order to prevent this, In-gong had to stop the fairy from emitting an endless amount of magic power.

The power of Conquest emerged from In-gong's palm and revolved around the fairy. As expected, In-gong frowned at the result.

The fairy wasn't like a separate item. It was a part of Silvan and was connected to Silvan's soul, so it wasn't possible to conquer it separately.

If so, there was only one way remaining.

"Shutra?"

Felicia wept as she called for him. She gasped as she read In-gong's expression and poured out,

"Is there a way? Is something wrong?"

Her words were deteriorating. It wasn't a situation where she could speak properly as per usual. However, her thoughts were still clear. She didn't miss the fact that there was a way for In-gong to save Silvan. Felicia grasped In-gong's hand tightly.

"Please. Please, I'll do anything. I'll do whatever I have to as long as Silvan will live. Please. Please, Shutra."

Felicia wept and begged, bowing her head several times while talking.

In-gong closed his eyes. He had no choice now. He had to do it. He couldn't do anything that would leave an irrevocable wound in Felicia's heart.

However, that wasn't the only reason. He didn't want to lose Silvan either. In-gong wanted to save this silly man.

In-gong settled his heart and opened his eyes. As he pushed Felicia's hand away gently, In-gong spoke to Silvan,

"Silvan hyung, can you hear my voice? There is only one way to save Hyung. You must accept my rule—become my knight. It is a magic ritual, so you shouldn't reject it. This way, I can save Hyung."

He had to make Silvan a member of the King's Knights. The Conquest Coat of Arms would be carved on Silvan, and he would be under In-gong's rule. Then it would be possible to influence the fairy without conquering it.

After In-gong accepted Vandal, the King's Knights were at full capacity. However, the level of Conquest rose in the battle against the Famine Knight, and it was the same for the King's Knights. The positions in the King's Knights increased from five to seven people, so he had room to accept Silvan.

The problem was something else. How would he explain to Felicia and Silvan about controlling the fairy? Could it be a gandharva magic or a unique family magic?

While that might work on others, it was no longer the case with Felicia; this was the limit.

However, he couldn't give up on Silvan. So, In-gong was prepared for whatever happened.

Then something unexpected occurred. Silvan's expression cracked after hearing In-gong's explanation. Despite facing death, Silvan was satisfied Felicia was still alive, but there was an expression of fierce rejection on his face.

"No..."

Silvan squeezed out. Felicia stared at Silvan with shock.

“Silvan?!”

Silvan no longer had the power to move his head and simply stared at Felicia with dull eyes. He wanted to reassure her and managed to speak after some difficulty.

“I... Felicia’s... knight... I swore... geis...”

“You fool! You will die! Die!”

Felicia’s shout struck like a thunderbolt, but Silvan didn’t listen and simply smiled. However, the strong feeling of rejection could be felt.

It wasn’t mere stubbornness. Silvan had mentioned a geis, a magic oath. Felicia also knew about that. So, thoughts ran through her mind desperately. As a good magician, she found the answer and grabbed In-gong’s hand once again. She poured out her words,

“Shutra, I will be your knight. If I go under you, Silvan, my knight, will become your knight, right?”

There was no contradiction in her logic. In-gong had a blank expression, while Delia couldn’t help feeling shocked.

However, Felicia just stared at In-gong with unwavering eyes and said,

“If you become the demon king, I will be your subordinate anyway. I know there is a magic ritual, but it doesn’t matter. It’s okay. Save him, Shutra.”

There were several magic spells in the Demon World which could bind an oath or relationship and some were worse than In-gong’s spell. There was magic which could give pain every time an order was disobeyed or even magic in which the master held the power of life or death.

It was the reason for Delia’s shock. Felicia’s situation was different from that of Silvan’s, whose life was at stake. Moreover, Felicia and Silvan had completely different positions. Being in a matriarchal society, Felicia was destined to become the next leader of the dark elves; she was going to become queen of the dark elves.

However, Felicia was already determined. Delia opened her mouth to stop Felicia, but in the end, she couldn't say anything. Her mouth opened and closed a few times before simply she bowed her head.

In-gong also made a decision. If it was Felicia, he didn't mind giving away the last spot in the King's Knights. No, he actually wanted to give it to her as she was precious to him.

In-gong nodded and looked back at Silvan. He placed both his hands on Felicia and Silvan's foreheads.

"Did you hear that, Hyung? I'm starting."

Silvan couldn't answer. His time was truly numbered.

Felicia bit her lip to restrain her nervousness. In-gong first cast the King's Knights on Felicia.

"Felicia Doomblade, I appoint you as my knight."

The power of Conquest enveloped Felicia, and she accepted In-gong's rule without rejecting it. Felicia became the sixth King's Knight. On Felicia's forehead, the white Conquest Coat of Arms emerged.

Next was Silvan. In-gong activated the King's Knights once again. There was only a short moment of rejection due to the dark elves' geis, then Silvan also accepted In-gong's rule. He became the seventh knight, and the same coat of arms appeared on his forehead.

Then the King's Knights took effect. The benefits offered to the knights were also shared with Felicia and Silvan.

Felicia's eyes widened with surprise. It wasn't just stronger physical ability but magic power as well.

It was also effective on Silvan. His magic power had almost been drained, but there was now a little bit of time before that.

In-gong followed up with the power of Conquest. It acted like reins on a wild horse to

pull back the raging fairy. Unlike Felicia and Silvan, the fairy resisted violently, but it was useless. Conquest was much stronger than before and instantly pushed down the fairy's resistance, subjugating it.

'Rule.'

The white woman said. In-gong obeyed her voice and controlled the fairy. He closed the hole which was leaking magic power and put the fairy to sleep.

The sight of the white light was truly beautiful and mysterious. As soon as the fairy became quiet, Silvan closed his eyes. His magic power had stopped leaking, and he had a very calm expression on his face.

In-gong let out a breath as the urgent fire was put out. He wiped the sweat off his forehead and saw that Felicia was teary-eyed once again.

Felicia laughed like a fool. She touched Silvan's forehead and cheek, and cried again. Then she opened her arms toward In-gong, who understood what she meant. Silvan was using her knees as a pillow, so she couldn't move to hug him.

Felicia was obviously taller than In-gong, but right now, she felt small and slender. Felicia grabbed In-gong tightly and burst into tears again. She cried like a child.

"Shutra, Shutra."

'I was so scared. So scared. I thought Silvan would die and leave me forever. Delia almost died, Sepira's arm was cut off, and the crew members are dead.'

Felicia wasn't able to speak these words. She then fainted in In-gong's arms. The tension had been so tight that she collapsed as soon as it was released.

In-gong hugged Felicia tightly once more before handing her over to Delia. He saw Sepira seat herself carefully next to Silvan, then she started weeping.

One wrist had been cut off cleanly. A simple recovery spell stopped it from bleeding. In-gong used recovery magic on Felicia and purified Sepira's arm. As she was bathed in the magic light, Sepira bowed with a humble expression. There was a deep emotion of appreciation on her face.

It was In-gong who had saved Silvan's life. So, for Sepira, In-gong was a lifesaver.

In-gong faced Sepira and examined the extent of her wound. This was a world where regeneration magic existed, so she might not always be crippled.

After worrying about Sepira, In-gong got up and looked around.

Black ash was scattered at the place where the Famine Knight had died. It was the trail of the person who had previously been Gerard.

Famine hadn't died. He had just been expelled from Gerard's body. However, he wouldn't be able to intervene for the time being.

This was quite natural because of the true story of the Conquest Knight.

Conquest, the red and blue eyed woman, didn't want the end of the world. So, she chose to fight against the other riders.

In-gong was able to understand Famine's and Death's hatred. He could see why War looked at Conquest with a mixture of dislike and goodwill.

They were Conquest's brothers and sisters, friends and lovers. From their standpoint, Conquest was the worst traitor.

In-gong closed his eyes and calmed his mind. For now, it was enough that he understood Conquest's true dream. He would gradually learn more.

'Then let's move on.'

It was hard to imagine the Famine Knight showed up because of Felicia and Silvan. Perhaps the ruin itself was his goal.

'Is there something like the Moonlight Extract?'

This was a ruin which hadn't appeared in Knight Saga, so In-gong didn't know what was inside it.

In-gong arranged his thoughts and picked up Amita's sword from the ground. Then he exclaimed unknowingly with admiration.

As expected from Amita... The sword was infused with the fairy's magic power, but the blade was still fine.

Silvan had been able to destroy half of the Famine Knight due to Amita's sword. In Knight Saga, Silvan didn't have a sword strong enough to endure the fairy's magic power. So, when he opened the fairy, he couldn't use his special swordsmanship.

In-gong laughed as he was reminded of Amita slamming their tail against the ground.

Then a voice was heard from right beside him,

"Master, is it over?"

It was Green Wind, who had become solid. In-gong looked at her and nodded.

"Roughly. Now, let's return to the Black Flame Dragon."

The Black Flame Dragon was near the entrance to the ruin. In-gong hadn't been able to look at the situation there because he had been flying so quickly, but he could guess. If the Famine Knight had entered through the entrance, then the crew of the Black Flame Dragon wouldn't have been safe.

He felt saddened as he remembered the crew members who laughed so happily. As his shoulders sagged without him realising, Green Wind pouted and moved into In-gong's field of view.

She tilted her head and looked up at In-gong like she had something to say.

"Green Wind?"

As In-gong called her name, Green Wind straightened and spoke in a slightly exaggerated tone,

"I flew an incredibly long distance today. I did plenty of worthwhile work. So far, I have been waiting patiently."

It was a face that wanted praise. In-gong had the gut feeling that Green Wind wasn't acting like this simply because she wanted praise. She was trying to change In-gong's

mood, and it was quite charming.

A smile formed on In-gong's face. He looked at the cute and lovely Green Wind and couldn't help wanting to praise her.

"Yes, that's right. As expected of Greenie. You did really well. If it hadn't been for Greenie, I wouldn't have been able to save Felicia, Silvan and the others."

In-gong stroked Green Wind's head while praising her in an exaggerated manner.

Instead of her usual reaction, Green Wind blushed and puffed out her cheeks like she didn't know what to do. In-gong asked with confusion,

"Why? Uh, did I pet you wrong?"

Was she sick of too much petting?

Green Wind shook her head at In-gong's question.

"Ah, no, I just suddenly felt embarrassed. Master, keep praising me. I did something worthy of praise."

Green Wind said, hitting her chest.

Her appearance was very cute, but In-gong didn't start praising her again.

"Sorry, let's do the rest later. Can you help me move Silvan-hyung?"

The size of the shield was quite large when White Eagle and Black Eagle were combined, so it was possible to carry Silvan in a lying down state.

"I am Master's. I will follow Master's commands."

Green Wind returned to White Eagle.

As Delia and Sepira loaded Silvan on White Eagle, In-gong suddenly raised his head and looked up at the sky. The moon, which had been hiding in the clouds, was suddenly revealed.



“Noona, I have a confession.”

# Chapter 142

## Conquest #3

In-gong returned to the Black Flame Dragon. He had already expected it, but the area surrounding the Black Flame Dragon was calm. The black ash on the ground and the dry, broken body parts made it obvious as to what had happened.

Sepira couldn't speak. She was doing her best to act as calmly as possible, but she was clearly emotional. She staggered as her eyes were busy looking around, hoping to spot any survivors.

In-gong, who carried Felicia on his back, didn't try to stop Sepira. It wasn't easy to say comforting words, so he just boarded the Black Flame Dragon quietly. He also thought it was lucky Felicia and Silvan had lost consciousness.

Having stayed on the Black Flame Dragon before, he knew its structure and headed straight to the captain's room. However, In-gong checked the mini-map, as was his habit, and his eyes widened.

"There are survivors!"

Sepira rushed up the stairs at In-gong's cry. Instead of waiting for her, In-gong headed straight to the place where the survivors were. It was the crew room.

There was an awful smell as soon as he opened the door. Delia, who was standing behind In-gong, blinked with confusion.

"The smell of alcohol?"

There were three crew members on the floor. There was one woman and two men. The thing they all had in common was the terrible smell of alcohol. One of them was still holding a big bottle.

After arriving late, Sepira sighed as soon as she saw the three people. Then she turned toward In-gong with a somewhat embarrassed face.

“Today was their day off.”

It seemed like they had drunk alcohol and gone to sleep without noticing the disturbance. They were lucky.

If the mission had been accomplished as usual, Sepira would have told them off for drinking and falling asleep even though it was their day off. However, the survival of the three people cut through her tension, and she started crying.

“There are three more people, so moving the Black Flame Dragon won’t be a problem.”

Sepira dried her tears and told In-gong. In-gong was gladdened by this and headed toward the captain’s room.

In-gong sighed as he watched Silvan and Felicia laying side by side on the big bed. As he watched the two people sleeping peacefully, In-gong’s heart calmed.

‘Carack will be worried.’

He had simply left without explaining properly.

The distance to the fourth base wasn’t that far, so long range communication should be possible. He felt sorry for the worried Carack, but the quickest he could send some news was tomorrow.

‘I saved Call.’

The reason why he hadn’t called Vandal in the fight against the Famine Knight was because Vandal’s current location was too far away.

As the level of the King’s Knights increased, the distance of Call also increased, so it might be possible one day. However, there was no reason to use it.

He accepted Felicia and Silvan as members of his knights, so he wanted to save Call.

In-gong arranged his thoughts and turned his gaze to Delia. She was very tired and wanted to rest, but he needed to know the situation. After leaving Felicia and Silvan to Sepira, he took Delia to an empty room nearby in order to hear her story.

They had been writing down the unknown characters from the indigenous species when the Famine Knight entered suddenly. Based on the story, the purpose of the Famine Knight seemed to be the ruin, like In-gong had surmised, and not Silvan and Felicia.

In-gong then decided to stop here and rest for today. He was curious about the characters carved in the ruin, but he couldn't leave Felicia and Silvan alone on the Black Flame Dragon.

In-gong sent Delia to take care of Felicia and lay down on a bed. It had been a huge day for In-gong as well. There were no problems with his stamina thanks to the constant level ups, but his nerves were still frayed.

"Protect the perimeter."

"I will. Goodnight, My Master."

Green Wind kissed In-gong gently on the forehead before scattering back into wind.

In-gong closed his eyes, and soon, he fell into a deep sleep.

"Master, wake up. It is morning."

Instead of Carack's rough voice, Green Wind's soft voice tickled his ears. In-gong opened his eyes slowly and saw Green Wind. She handed In-gong a glass of water and said,

"I saw what the orc did. Here is a cup of cold water to drink. I've also prepared water to wash up."

He turned away from Green Wind's bright eyes and saw the basin beside the bed. It was filled with cold water.

"How is it, Master? Aren't you fine without the orc?"

"Yes."

Green Wind laughed at In-gong's words. Her face was so beautiful that In-gong refrained from saying Carack would have prepared a towel to clean his face.

Anyhow, In-gong woke up thanks to Green Wind and headed to the captain's room. He looked at the time displayed on the mini-map and saw that it was already noon.

"You've come. Both of them are calm."

Delia welcomed him as he entered the captain's room. Sepira had fallen asleep while sitting down. She and Delia had alternated guarding Felicia and Silvan. Delia had dark circles under her eyes, but her expression was bright. In-gong felt sorry toward Delia and made up his mind—one more hand was needed to help.

"So, that is why you called me?"

"Yes, you are a perfect housewife."

In-gong muttered as he summoned Carack.

"That—I thought it was because there was a crisis."

"Then would you like to change your position?"

"I will work hard."

Carack whined playfully, and In-gong just laughed. Another reason was that he wanted to experience the increased distance of Call after the level up.

"How has it been?"

"There was an uproar. Prince left with just the words that 6th Princess was in danger. 8th Princess had just arrived and was talking to me, so she must have been surprised when I disappeared."

It was a natural story. Moreover, it was a dangerous situation, so it was frustrating not knowing the situation.

'Caitlin will worry a lot.'

An image of Caitlin stomping her feet came to his mind clearly.

“Anyway, I want to ask you to handle the work. Both Delia and Sepira are too tired.”

“Understood. Leave it to me.”

Carack pounded his chest with a trustworthy face and walked out of the room. As expected, he showed his skills. Thanks to that, Delia and Sepira’s feelings seemed to deepen, but In-gong could understand. It was enough that Nayatra didn’t join them.

Time passed, and it became evening. Silvan was still asleep, but Felicia had woken up. She washed up and had a meal with Delia’s help, then watched In-gong with teary eyes again. She hugged In-gong and thanked him repeatedly.

Thanks to Felicia, In-gong barely managed to ask Carack and Delia to leave the room. He had something that he could discuss only with Felicia. Delia exchanged glances with Felicia before leaving the room, then In-gong put Felicia back on the bed. He sat down in a chair opposite her.

Felicia opened her fan and covered her face because of a simple reason:

“I’m so embarrassed.”

The tips of her long ears were red. She had cried most of yesterday and was doing the same today. In-gong laughed because she looked pretty cute.

“Isn’t it too late now?”

“It is really embarrassing.”

Felicia complained before fanning herself a few times, then she faced In-gong with a well-prepared expression.

“Okay, I am ready. You can speak now.”

“Noona, I have a confession.”

“Wait a minute, wait a minute.”

Felicia hurried to restrain In-gong as she fanned herself and took deep breaths. Her embarrassed gaze peeked at In-gong from behind the fan.

Then after a few minutes, Felicia took a deep breath and told In-gong again,

“Okay, again.”

“I have a confession.”

In-gong and Felicia burst out laughing. Felicia stared at In-gong and said,

“You will tell me now?”

“Yes, I think I can speak if it is Noona.”

It was a secret he kept even from Carack. It was a very important secret that related directly to In-gong. However, it would be okay if the other person was Felicia.

In-gong stared straight at Felicia with red eyes and said,

“Felicia noona, I am a Conquest Knight.”

They were short and simple words.

In-gong swallowed his saliva while Felicia rolled her eyes. Then she called out to In-gong,

“Shutra.”

“Huh?”

“What is that?”

The serious atmosphere was broken, but this was also good. In-gong nodded and said,

“Let me explain.”

“Uh, that... In summary. There are four beings who yearn for the end of the world, and

each of them chose four knights which are referred to as the Four Knights of the Apocalypse. They are Conquest, War, Death and Famine... and you are the Conquest Knight?"

In-gong nodded at Felicia's question. Then Felicia continued to narrow it down.

"Among the four, Conquest betrayed the rest, and she longs for the maintenance of this world, not its destruction. Therefore, she decided on a knight like Shutra, who wants to protect the world. Apart from her, the other three are still working toward the end of the world. Gerard was the Famine Knight, while the enemies with the violet aura which we dealt with several times are associated with the Death Knight. Whereas, the barbarians were associated with the War Knight."

"That's right."

Felicia quickly understood. She accepted In-gong's story and sighed.

"It is the first time I've heard of this, but... I am convinced. Everything fits."

With Shutra's explanation, the questions in her head started to be answered one by one.

Felicia asked In-gong,

"Shutra, have you only recently awakened as a Conquest Knight?"

"That's right. It happened during the Red Lightning tribe mission."

Felicia closed her eyes at In-gong's answer. This time, it really did make sense. The Prince of Scraps, the incompetent 9th Prince had only started to show his greatness during the Red Lightning tribe mission.

"But then... I can't imagine what it is like to be a knight. In a sense, Conquest is like a divine being, isn't she? Have you received a revelation?"

"It's not like that... I just know in the moment. Oh, I'm also a knight, not Conquest. In fact, I only recently came to know about the rest of the beings and their knights. I had to do my own research."



“Indeed... Anyway, one mystery has been solved. Somehow, even if you were a genius, it was too much. Nevertheless, Shutra is a special person.”

Shutra had become too strong in such a short period of time. This was due to the power of Conquest.

‘There is also Protagonist Correction.’

However, he couldn’t talk about that.

In-gong watched Felicia and said,

“Noona is also special. So, I am confessing this secret.”

His words were flattery, but they were also true. Felicia spread open the fan again and said,

“At any rate, it is good. I really appreciate it. Especially the fact that I am the first to know this secret.”

Caitlin and Chris didn’t know this story. Just like when she found out about the inventory, Felicia was competing with Caitlin and Chris strangely.

“Okay, Shutra. You’ve told me the story, so I will tell you my conclusions.”

Felicia folded her fan with a loud sound and leaned closer to In-gong.

“For now, let’s keep it a secret.”

There was no smile on Felicia’s face. She was currently very serious.

“It is fine to report that the group attacking us consists of the Death Knight and War Knight. Maybe the Demon King’s Palace already knows about the Four Knights of the Apocalypse. They have great knowledge after all.”

Felicia was a ruins expert, but she was only 20 years old. The Demon King’s Palace had a vast collection of knowledge Felicia didn’t know. There might be something about the Four Knights of the Apocalypse in there.

So, they could tell the Demon King's Palace that the Death and War Knights were attacking. Maybe they already knew about it.

"But we must hide the fact that Shutra is the Conquest Knight."

Felicia grasped In-gong's hand tightly. It was a warm hand.

"Shutra, I trust you. I know that you are different from Death, War and Famine. But the Demon King's Palace may not think this way. Do you know what I mean?"

"I know."

The Death Knight and War Knight were enemies of the Demon King's Palace. It was possible the palace would treat In-gong, a Conquest Knight, like them. In the worst case scenario, they would try to remove In-gong.

"Yes, then let's keep it a secret. I'm sorry for the Demon King's Palace, but you are much more precious than them."

Felicia said with a gentle smile, and that smile was so beautiful. In-gong turned his eyes away awkwardly and said,

"Mmm, as expected of Silvan hyung's twin."

The words were beautiful but also embarrassing. Felicia immediately released In-gong's hand after being compared to Silvan. She covered her red face and said,

"Ah, well. Okay. Based on this story, the Famine Knight likely wants something from the ruin. Then it makes sense to check what it is. Isn't that right?"

"Of course. Let's go back as soon as the sun rises tomorrow morning."

The Famine Knight had coveted something in the ruin. By obtaining it, they would gain a huge help and deal a blow to Famine simultaneously.

"By the way, Shutra, I was wondering about one thing."

"What is it?"

“The Four Knights of the Apocalypse? So, is this the apocalypse? Do you know what type of apocalypse?”

It was a reasonable question.

In-gong laughed awkwardly and said,

“I am still investigating.”

“As soon as you see it, you can read unknown words. A scam. It is a scam!”

“Caitlin noona would have said that I’m amazing.”

# Chapter 143

## Conquest #4

Apocalypse could be associated with words such as prophecy, revelation, and so on.

In other words, if there were Four Knights of the Apocalypse, then there was a possibility of the existence of things such as a book of revelations or a prophecy.

He had heard the title 'the Four Knights of the Apocalypse' for the first time from the last flame. However, the last flame hadn't mentioned anything about the apocalypse. She didn't know anything except that the knights were desperate for destruction.

For her, the Four Knights of the Apocalypse was just a story.

In-gong only had access to the first floor of the library, which could be called the surface, so he couldn't obtain such information. However, adding up all his merits from this time, he might be able to find new information.

After finishing the conversation with Felicia, In-gong contacted the transfer facility near Takar. The communication device installed on the Black Flame Dragon had the essence of the dark elves' power, so the distance for sending and receiving signals was considerable.

By communicating through each base from the transport formation tower, the news would reach the fourth base in a few hours.

'6th Princess is safe. I'll be back in a few days.'

It was a short message, but it was better than nothing.

As usual, In-gong trained before falling asleep. Then the next morning, he left with the excited Felicia to explore the ruins.

Felicia and Delia were the only ones involved in the ruins exploration.

Silvan was still asleep and after overworking for so long, Sepira finally lay down. Thus, Carack stayed behind on the Black Flame Dragon to take care of the two people. Of course, there were three surviving crew members on the Black Flame Dragon, but it was inevitable that In-gong would trust Carack more. Additionally, the three crew members were busy managing the Black Flame Dragon.

“Delia, isn’t it better for you to take a break?”

In-gong suddenly asked Delia as they were walking toward the entrance of the ruins. Delia’s face was filled with fatigue because like Sepira, she had worked continuously. However, Delia shook her head.

“The greatest rest is seeing that Princess is safe.”

It wasn’t just flattery but true words. They had such a hard time in the ruins that Delia was just happy Felicia was safe.

“But you were attacked as well.”

Felicia frowned and asked with a concerned voice. Unlike Felicia and Sepira, Delia had been struck by a direct attack from the Famine Knight.

Once again, Delia shook her head.

“I’m okay. Amita’s armour protected me. I am alive thanks to that.”

As Delia said, Amita’s armour had protected her. At the time of the attack, a red force field had spread from the chest piece. Thanks to this force field, she was fine despite the attack being so strong that she had been blown away.

“Silvan hyung’s sword is the same... I can see Amita’s craftsmanship.”

“Yes, indeed... It truly isn’t normal.”

In-gong and Delia exchanged glances and laughed. However, Felicia’s face was still full of concern.

“Still, it is better not to just believe in equipment. Understand?”

“I understand.”

Delia answered quickly, but In-gong and Felicia knew. If something dangerous happened again, Delia wouldn't hesitate to act as a shield. She was just like Carack.

“Okay, then let's concentrate on exploring the ruins. The unknown characters are found near the entrance.

Felicia clapped to get In-gong and Delia's attention and started moving confidently.

A while after arriving at the entrance of the ruins, Felicia stomped her feet and shouted,

“As soon as you see the unknown words, you can read them. A scam... It is a scam!”

Her face was full of deprivation and unhappiness. In-gong's ability was indeed a scam for ruins experts. How many nights had she spent studying the dwarf characters or unknown characters just for him to learn the scripts instantly?

Felicia sighed as she recalled the past.

“Caitlin noona would have said that I'm amazing.”

He missed the eyes which would shine like lanterns. Felicia's eyes narrowed at In-gong's remark, while Delia tried not to laugh.

Felicia had shared all the information with Delia, but she didn't reveal that In-gong was the Conquest Knight. She had just said that In-gong had a powerful and special ability.

Anyway, Felicia's expression, a mix of jealousy, chagrin and other emotions, was really worth watching. He was watching her face quietly when he heard a voice from beside him,

“Master, Master.”

It was Green Wind who had become solid. Green Wind cleared her throat and smiled

happily as In-gong turned toward her.

“Master is amazing.”

Although it was enough to make his heart shake, In-gong shook his head.

“No, there is something lacking.”

Caitlin’s one had something more to it. Indeed, wasn’t she hard to exceed?

After In-gong’s evaluation, Green Wind became sulky and disappeared. He ignored her sulkiness.

“Well, ignoring that nonsense, what does it say?”

Felicia asked with a curious voice. In-gong looked at the characters once again. Unlike the dwarf and dragon characters, the indigenous species language skill was still level one, so his reading comprehension was somewhat slow.

‘Is it similar to a power plant?’

Thanks to the strength of Conquest, In-gong eventually managed to comprehend what he was reading.

According to In-gong, these ruins formed a huge power plant. As they went deeper, the scent of magic power became stronger because the power generator was down there.

In-gong concluded as he turned toward Felicia.

“This is a facility that produces magic power. And...”

“And?”

“It does seem to belong to the extinct indigenous species.”

In fact, the latter was so obvious that In-gong didn’t care, but Felicia was different. Her eyes were shining excitedly like she was Caitlin.

“Oh, my god. It is real. Real! The indigenous species really did have a civilization before us.”

Thunderdoom Fortress was old, but the facility was still built within the records of the dark elves. It couldn't be compared to the ruins built by the indigenous species before the recorded era.

Felicia hurried forward happily, prompting In-gong every time the unknown characters appeared. She didn't forget to take notes of In-gong's answers. Maybe she was creating a translation dictionary.

As Felicia marvelled over the ruins repeatedly, they reached the fifth floor, which was the lowest layer of the ruins.

The fifth floor was similar to the room on the third floor, but the density of magic power was really amazing. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that the whole room was full of magic power. The room on the fifth floor was almost 10 meters tall, but the floors, walls and ceilings were full of intricate magic circles. It felt like a giant circuit diagram. In the middle of the room, there was a large chunk of magic power floating on an altar at the center of the circuit. It was almost the size of a basketball.

“A magic power crystal...”

Felicia muttered in a voice full of admiration. In-gong could see why the Famine Knight had visited this ruins.

The body of the Famine Knight, Gerard Moonlight, had been in a state of collapse due to his long imprisonment. During their first encounter, he had appeared for the Moonlight Extract, rather than Caitlin and Chris.

This was for the same reason; the Famine Knight needed to regain strength by absorbing this chunk of magic power.

In his early days, Gerard had been equal to a captain. If he had really absorbed the magic power, a terrible tragedy would have taken place.

“This facility was created to produce the crystallized magic power?”

Felicia muttered as she examined the circuit. In-gong nodded and wondered about



what to do with the magic power crystal.

‘If it were a plant like the Moonlight Extract, I could just eat it.’

Unfortunately, it was a mass of pure magic power. So, it was impossible to absorb it by eating.

‘I can try to subdue it with Conquest.’

However, he was quite skeptical. The power of Conquest was different from the power of Famine. The power of Famine was absorption and depletion, while Conquest was domination and control. Unlike Ainkel’s dragon heart, which was a type of magic spell, the crystal was a collection of pure magic power. So, it was doubtful if Conquest would work.

‘Master, you don’t need to conquer it. The magic power before you was made to be absorbed. Master has the dragon heart, so you will be able to absorb it.’

He heard Green Wind’s voice while he was busy worrying. In-gong asked reflexively,

‘Made to be absorbed?’

‘That’s right, I can feel it. Maybe it’s a fragment of knowledge Ainkel left behind. The magic power in before your eyes was made for the purpose of absorption. An ordinary person may not be able to absorb too much magic power, but Master has the dragon heart. It is an opportunity for your incomplete dragon heart to grow.’

Her words sounded plausible. From the outset, this was a power plant which produced energy and sent it elsewhere.

‘An opportunity for my incomplete dragon heart to grow? What does that mean?’

‘Master, do you think that the power of a dragon heart is only that much? The amount of aura is small, so the output of magic power is also small. Master has a piece of dragon heart from Ainkel. Master’s dragon heart is starving, and you need to fill its stomach in order to make it grow.’

In-gong’s eyes widened at Green Wind’s words. This amount of magic power was enough to increase his triple core to a quad-core.

Of course, the quad-core was a hybrid of the triple-core and magic power, making it a little bit weaker than the original quad-core. Even so, the amount of magic power produced was approximately half of his aura. So, it wasn't a small amount.

'Hu, okay.'

Anyway, it was possible to absorb the magic power and make his dragon heart grow. In that case, there was no reason to hesitate.

"Felicia noona, stand back for a moment."

In-gong checked the magic circuit and stood in front of the crystal. Instead of paying attention to Felicia, he brought his hands to the crystal.

"Shutra?"

Felicia sprang back in shock as a huge amount of light emerged from the crystal. At the same time, In-gong's dragon heart responded. It devoured the magic power which was pushed into In-gong's palms.

In-gong's arms started shaking, and the dragon heart seemed like it would burst. In-gong clenched his teeth and persisted. Once he couldn't tolerate it anymore, he screamed and a clear voice was heard in his head.

[The dragon heart's level has risen.]

[The dragon heart's level has risen.]

[The dragon heart has grown.]

In-gong's hands were thrown away from the crystal, and he gasped for air. Then... he could feel it.

The dragon heart had grown. Just like Green Wind's words, so far, the dragon heart had been 'small'. The aura output hadn't changed, but the output of magic power had increased tremendously. It was almost three—no, five times what it had been before.

In-gong formed a fist. He released his magic power consciously—a green magic power which grew like a flame.

‘If there is this much magic power... ’

In-gong cast Fire Arrow. Rather than an arrow, a giant pillar formed above In-gong’s palm, almost like a ballista.

“Fire Spear? No, Fire Ballista?”

The shocked Felicia asked In-gong.

“No, it is just Fire Arrow.”

The basic configuration was the same, but the amount of magic power entered was different. Of course, this was a performance in order to show off his magic power. Rather than pouring more magic power into Fire Arrow, it was better to use Fire Spear or Fire Ballista.

However, it was clearly something not everyone could do.

In-gong made the fire pillar disappear and explained to Felicia,

“I absorbed the magic power from the crystal, and my dragon heart grew. Thanks to that, my magic power is now stronger. How is it? Isn’t this good?”

Would the word ‘amazing’ come out this time?

In response to In-gong’s question, Felicia opened her mouth slowly,

“Shutra is a scammer.”

In-gong used the rest of the magic power in the crystal to treat Silvan. As the fairy’s magic power had been exhausted, its absorption rate was enormous. It was like pouring water onto earth which had become cracked from a drought.

The ruins still produced magic power, but the functions were greatly diminished.

Everything had already been extracted so he decided to report it to the Demon King's Palace without any regrets.

After completing the work at the ruins, In-gong's group headed toward Silvan's first base in Karamis. From there, he would report what happened to the Demon King's Palace.

By late afternoon, the Black Flame Dragon was soaring through the sky.

Famine had been expelled.

In the first place, it had been too much for Famine to control the Famine Knight, and the backlash from losing the Famine Knight was severe. For a while, Famine would be in a deep sleep.

The Death Knight realized the Famine Knight had vanished. He also didn't miss the fact that it had been because of the Conquest Knight.

Conquest's betrayal was now a matter of fact. She had truly chosen to be hostile towards them.

Death felt pained.

However, the Death Knight didn't feel anything. Unlike Death or Famine, he had known this a long time ago. 1,000 years ago, he had witnessed the end of Conquest during that fight and understood Conquest wouldn't side with them anymore.

The Death Knight let out a long sigh. As he thought of the distant past, he became convinced once again.

The Conquest Knight was incomplete. Conquest had been destroyed 1,000 years ago, so it was unlikely she even had proper communication with the Conquest Knight.

The Death Knight looked toward the south.

It wasn't just the Conquest Knight; there were two more beings who attracted his attention.

2nd Prince Zephyr Ragnaros...

The strongest child of the demon king, and a person who had been born with the flesh of a dragon.

...And there was another one—Warrior Locke, born with the spirit of a dragon. He was the sword prepared by Guardian Queian, one of the six elder dragons and an enemy of the beings longing for destruction.

Famine was expelled, and the Famine Knight destroyed. However, there was no big hindrance to the plan.

The Death Knight shifted his gaze from the south towards the sky.

He waited for the promised day to come again.

# Chapter 144

## Queen

On the first day of arrival at the first base, Silvan regained consciousness. His condition was better than expected because his magic power had been charged by the crystal. However, it was just up to there. For the time being, stabilization and medical care were essential.

As soon as Silvan woke up, he got up to look for Felicia, and Carack and Sepira had to call In-gong and Felicia hastily. Silvan was terribly agitated for many reasons.

There were three reasons for Silvan's agitation. One was naturally his worry for Felicia, while the other was Sepira's cut wrist. Silvan had cut her wrist in order to stop Famine's power, but he still felt sorry when he saw it. It was as expected from Felicia's twin brother. Just like Felicia, he was overflowing with care for others.

The third and biggest reason for Silvan's agitation was the fairy. His right eye had always been covered, but he now stared at In-gong and Felicia with both eyes.

"It is really amazing."

Silvan blinked several times. Despite not doing anything, he was able to see the world through the fairy. Sometimes the fairy would give his right eye a golden colour, but otherwise, it was just an ordinary eye.

Silvan could feel the flow of powerful magic power. His body was filled with magic power, but there was no magic power leaking out.

It was all thanks to In-gong. In-gong had conquered the fairy for Silvan and set a limit. Thanks to that, the output of the fairy fell dramatically, but it prevented the magic power from running wild.

"Hyung will be able to use more magic power once you become better at handling magic. But make sure to pay attention. The nature of the fairy itself hasn't changed. So, once the fairy opens up, the magic will run wild again."

Basically, In-gong had locked the big water tank with a broken faucet and put aside a bucket. The bucket would become bigger when his use of magic power improved, but that didn't fix the broken faucet. Silvan had to refrain from opening the fairy until he learnt how to open and close the faucet forcefully.

However, even if it was in a limited state, he could still use the fairy. So, this was a big development.

"Shutra's power... it is really amazing. Really amazing."

Rather than explaining Conquest, he had just told Silvan that it was a special power. Although Silvan was a little exaggerated, he was trustworthy, like Felicia. However, the fewer people who knew the secret, the better. In-gong might tell him someday, but it didn't need to be right now.

Silvan smiled widely at In-gong and Felicia, then he watched Felicia with a burning gaze.

"Felicia, Oppa will become stronger for you. I will also study the magic I had put aside. Magic warrior... No, I will be reborn as a true magic swordsman. Starting today, please call me Magic Swordsman Silvan."

His voice, which was full of determination, was nice, and his face was handsome as well. However, Felicia made a disgusted expression while Carack laughed. A few days ago, he had been discussing a magic warrior with In-gong.

'I was right.'

'Yes.'

In-gong smiled awkwardly as they talked with their eyes. Then Silvan glanced at In-gong and declared,

"Shutra, thank you again. For saving Felicia, Sepira, Delia and I... as well as getting revenge on the crew members' killer, I really appreciate it. I will never forget this. From this day on, I am both Felicia's knight and your knight. I will serve you for the rest of my life."

There was deep sorrow as well as gratitude in his solemn voice. In-gong didn't hate this Silvan. How could he hate this human aspect of him?

Then Silvan suddenly turned back toward Felicia and frowned. He spoke to In-gong with a complicated expression,

"Well, please understand that Felicia is more of a priority."

In-gong figured that was the case. He laughed and nodded.

"I understand, Hyung. Please take care of me in the future."

The most precious thing to Silvan was Felicia. In-gong accepted this fact about Silvan and had no complaints. Silvan was Felicia's knight before he was In-gong's, and Felicia was precious to In-gong as well.

As In-gong and Silvan exchanged warm glances, Carack said to Felicia,

"Aren't you going to say anything?"

"There is no use talking to fools."

Felicia replied while covering her face with a fan. He couldn't help but notice the red ears which peeked out from above the fan. The situation had a mixture of both warmth and embarrassment.

Delia, who had been outside for a while, came back with a report. It was a reply from the Demon King's Palace.

"It is as expected."

In-gong handed the message to Silvan after reading it.

The Demon King's Palace had ordered them to return.

Felicia stretched her shoulders as she felt the increased tension.



“There are many sensitive issues. And aren’t things in the south almost finished being organized? These days, it seems like the north is really noisy. Maybe we will be sent on a support mission to the north.”

Evian, the territory which In-gong was responsible for, hadn’t been the only one attacked. In the north, where there was always a small battlefield, there had already been several big fights. After the barbarian king had been killed, they no longer needed to worry about the eastern barbarians of Evian. Meanwhile, Silvan had cleared his area.

Moreover, the attacks of those with the purple aura, which had been the reason for placing the royal children in various places, was presently concentrated on the north. As the situation got worst, it was natural to think of going to support the north.

‘The problem is who we are going to support.’

Among the five children of the demon king in the north, except for Chris, all of them were from different factions. It would be difficult if he was going to support Baikal, Zephyr or Anastasia.

In-gong cut off these thoughts for now. It wasn’t just to support the north that they were ordered to return to the Demon King’s Palace.

The Death Knight was attacking all over the Demon World. Meanwhile, the War Knight had given strength to the eastern barbarians. Additionally, the Famine Knight had driven Silvan and Felicia to the brink of death.

There needed to be a briefing on these three things. It wasn’t clear how much information the Demon King’s Palace had about the Four Knights of the Apocalypse, but the strikes from the Death Knight and War Knight were directly damaging the Demon World.

Felicia turned toward Silvan.

“Silvan, I think we need to move separately from the Black Flame Dragon. Do you know why?”

Apart from Silvan and Sepira, the Black Flame Dragon only had three crew members remaining on it. It was impossible to fly at the highest speed for a long time, so it would

take a considerable amount of time to return to the Demon King's Palace using the Black Flame Dragon.

They had to use the transportation formation to return to the palace in time.

Silvan looked grouchy, but it was only for a second. Felicia smiled softly and reassured him,

"I know it is heartbreaking for you, as the captain, but it can't be helped. I will ask Aunt Alita to look after the ship for a bit."

Once In-gong and Felicia returned, Alita's mission to support the two of them would have ended. Alita was family, so they could entrust the Black Flame Dragon to her.

"Okay, let's get ready to go back. Once Caitlin arrives, we will all return to the Demon King's Palace."

The return order had also gone to Caitlin, who had remained in Evian. This was the reason why Felicia had expected they would be sent to support the north. If it were for the purpose of protecting the land, there was no reason for Caitlin to return.

Felicia headed to the communications room to tell Caitlin to join them in Karamis, while Silvan was pushed by Sepira into resting.

In-gong sat alone on the deck of the Black Flame Dragon and thought about the future.

Just a few days ago, he had defeated the Famine Knight.

War, Death and Famine—

They were beings hostile to Conquest and defeating them wouldn't be an easy task. The Famine Knight was both strong and weak. It was a bit strange, but that was the only way he could express it.

In-gong divided the strength of the knights into two. One was the knight's own strength, while the other was the added power of Conquest, War, Death and Famine.

The Famine Knight, Gerard Moonlight, had been strong. After being imprisoned for 20 years, he had been weaker than his prime, but he had still been strong enough to

defeat Silvan in such a weak state.

On the other hand, the power of Famine wasn't that strong. Once In-gong emanated the power of Conquest, the power of Famine could barely be used.

Why? Was it because he had only been the Famine Knight for a short time? If so, how long had the Death Knight and War Knight been knights? Why was the time difference between knights so big?

The clue was the fight from 1,000 years ago. There had been a fight, and Watcher Ainkel had lost her life. Starting from 1,000 years ago, the elder dragons hid themselves from the Demon World.

Conquest, War, Death and Famine were existences which fought the elder dragons.

'If the fight continued... '

In-gong came to a conclusion.

The Death Knight or War Knight might have lived as knights for 1,000 years. It was indeed a very long time.

'What are they doing? And why have they resumed their activities now?'

The Four Knights of the Apocalypse were those who craved destruction. If so, their actions were meant to cause the end of the world.

An attack on the Demon King's Palace... Killing guardians in various places and turning those areas into desert... Were these actions related to the end of the world? Or did they just want to destroy the Demon King's Palace and turn the Demon World back into a crucible of confusion?

'I remember the words of the sword duke.'

Threats to the Demon World existed in the past, present and future. He had to become strong enough to defeat them.

It was indeed a simple answer. Just thinking about it caused his heart to beat wildly.

“Yes, this is the right answer.”

‘Become strong.’

If he won the confrontation, then all the problems would be settled. Although it was a story for the future, it might be possible to find out why In-gong came to this world and if there was a way to return.

In-gong decided to think about things after arriving at the Demon King’s Palace. His merit level would increase greatly, so it was the perfect timing to do the things he had postponed. Additionally, it was good since all the other children of the demon king, except for those in his faction, were away from the palace.

In-gong would use this opportunity to collect information from the library as well as find the various hidden events and items in the Demon King’s Palace. He hadn’t been able to do it previously because his merit level was too low.

‘Next, there are things related to magic and the churches.’

In-gong’s eyes burnt with ambition as he planned his tour of the Demon King’s Palace.

Then three days later in the afternoon, Caitlin arrived at the first base in Karamis.

“Shutra is amazing.”

Caitlin’s eyes shone like lanterns as she heard about how In-gong saved Felicia. She gave him the bright smile he loved so much.

“Ah, this is it.”

In-gong nodded with satisfaction while Green Wind grumbled.

‘It is the same. There is nothing different with my version. Master is strange. Fool. Hateful. Not amazing.’

He could only hear her voice since she wasn’t in a solid form, but he could imagine the face she was making. Her grumbling was cute, so In-gong couldn’t help smiling, which

caused Felicia to frown.

“Shutra is good, but sometimes, you are a pervert.”

“Right. Sometimes you laugh while I am telling you a story. Even your training seems painful, but you just give a scary laugh.”

Felicia’s expression changed as Carack spoke. It was similar to how she looked at Silvan.

Felicia’s reaction was a burden, but Caitlin and Nayatra’s reactions made it more difficult for In-gong. Nayatra was looking at In-gong with very intrigued eyes. No, what was that gaze? Why was she blushing?!

While In-gong was panicking, Silvan spoke with a smile on his face.

“Well, he is still Shutra. Hyung understands. I am your knight. People have different tastes. I still respect you.”

What type of taste was he talking about?

In-gong tried to defend himself, but the mood wasn’t good. Furthermore, Caitlin laughed and dealt the final attack.

“Shutra, do you want to be hit with aura again?”

He would rather die!

In-gong sighed and said to Carack,

“Let’s go back now—to the Demon King’s Palace.”

The same afternoon, the transportation formation at the first base was activated. Their destination was the Demon King’s Palace.

“The schedule for the court gathering has been set.”

# Chapter 145

## Queen #2

It was his fourth time returning to the Demon King's Palace. The first three times had been through the transportation formation, so he was familiar with the transportation formation location in the Demon King's Palace.

In comparison to when he left, the number of In-gong's companions had increased due to the addition of Nayatra, Silvan and Sepira.

Unfortunately, Vandal had to stay behind in order to defend Evian. Alita and Kaparang had been sent as personnel to support the Evian mission, so they didn't return to the Demon King's Palace.

'I'm glad I got to say goodbye to Alita.'

Alita had come to Karamis to take care of the Black Flame Dragon, however, In-gong hadn't been able to return to Evian and say goodbye to Vandal and Kaparang. He had strong feelings towards the comrades he had fought with on the front lines.

In-gong opened his eyes slowly. The magic light from the formation was fading, and he was able to see those waiting for them.

The welcome crew increased in size every time he returned through the transportation formation. This was despite the fact that several concubine children had been dispatched along with the royal children to various places around the Demon World.

Without much difficulty, In-gong was able to find Flora, who had come to meet him. Standing next to her were the concubine children, who were part of Felicia's faction, as well as Beiring, Karapapa and several people from Felicia's mansion. Some concubine children from the previous tea party were added, so dozens of people were waiting to welcome them.

'It is overwhelming.'

In-gong smiled at Flora. However, Flora and the welcoming party seemed strangely baffled.

Why? Was it due to the addition of Nayatra? Or was it because of Sepira's cut off hand? It was unlikely. He felt sorry toward Nayatra and Sepira, but the welcoming party wasn't really paying attention to them. It didn't make sense that the two people would confuse everyone in the welcoming party.

There had to be another reason, and In-gong soon saw it as he felt something familiar.

The crowd of people, who had come here either to observe or for some other reason, split apart as a group headed toward In-gong's party. There were several people, but the middle one was a face he had already seen a few times.

"Mama?! Ah, no. Mother?"

Caitlin shouted reflexively before correcting herself hastily.

It was the 4th Queen, Elaine Moonlight. The queen of the lycanthropes smiled gracefully at Caitlin's mistake and moved her gaze to In-gong. As always, her eyes were calm but difficult to read. Ludwig, the leader of the Blood Companions, was standing beside her with a strict expression.

In-gong greeted Elaine, followed by Caitlin, Felicia and Silvan. Then Elaine replied in a gentle voice,

"It is nice to see you. This is our first encounter in the Demon King's Palace. Once again, welcome back."

Elaine was very graceful and beautiful. However, In-gong felt a sense of incongruity hearing her talk like that while still resembling Caitlin. In-gong greeted her once again,

"Thank you for your hospitality, Your Majesty."

"It is natural."

While In-gong and Elaine were exchanging greetings slowly, the impatient Caitlin spoke,

“Your Majesty, what brings you to the Demon Kin...”

“It isn’t good to stand here and talk. We shall talk later so just go back to your mansion for now.”

Elaine cut off Caitlin in the middle and stared straight at In-gong. Caitlin closed her mouth with dismay while In-gong quickly said,

“We will do so, Your Majesty.”

“Then Caitlin, I will see you later.”

“Yes.”

After Caitlin replied, Elaine said goodbye and left. In-gong looked back and muttered in a small voice to Carack,

“Do you think she will come to the mansion?”

“Perhaps, or maybe she intends to invite us. The queen has a mansion too.”

It was a reasonable opinion. After all, it was better for the queen to invite the prince than the other way around.

‘Is it because of Gerard?’

Gerard had escaped from the lycanthropes’ Grey Tower. Due to this, In-gong had told the lycanthropes he had taken care of Gerard. If it was really about Gerard, then he didn’t need to worry about why the 4th Queen had come to the palace.

After Elaine left, the welcoming party headed toward In-gong’s group, and Flora was as serious as always.

“Your Highness, I’m glad you’ve come back safely.”

“I’m glad to see you, Flora. Has there been anything unusual while I was gone?”

“The mansion is calm.”



It was a short and quick answer. Then In-gong asked again,

“Anything else?”

“The schedule for the court gathering has been set.”

“Well then, won’t something happen again this time?”

Carack asked with a serious expression. In-gong turned toward Carack.

“Hey, what basis do you have for saying that? By the way, should you really be saying that?”

“I gave up. Prince will be more comfortable if you give up as well. Putting down the burden will ease your mind.”

Carack said with worldly eyes. The clear, deep eyes made it seem like he had gained spiritual enlightenment.

In-gong huffed before turning back to the group. It seemed like all the greetings were over, so he gave an order to Carack,

“Anyway, let’s move on.”

“Uhh, why do I feel like I’m back home? This can’t be.”

As soon as they entered the parlor of In-gong’s mansion, Amita stopped imitating a pet and sighed deeply. That ominous feeling had returned. Maybe they would have to live here for the rest of their life.

As Amita’s ominous feeling increased further, Delia lowered herself to Amita’s eye level and bowed.

“Amita, my life was saved thanks to the armour you made. Thank you.”

After Delia showed her appreciation, Silvan moved as well. Silvan lowered his posture

next to Delia and said in a solemn voice,

“I also want to thank you. I wouldn’t be here if it wasn’t for Amita’s sword.”

“I’m grateful. Amita is Silvan and Delia’s saviour.”

Felicia didn’t lower her posture, but she spoke in a lively voice. Then Amita responded in a rough voice,

“Hrmm. What saviour? I just did what I said I would do. It is just equipment. Don’t act like this. It is disgusting.”

They grunted, but their tail was waving in the air instead of pounding on the ground.

Daphne and the others covered their mouths to hide their smiles. Whether it was because their work was appreciated or some other reason, Amita seemed quite happy.

“This is the perfect timing to distribute some equipment.”

“Oh, did you complete more?”

Carack asked with shining eyes, and Amita nodded.

“I followed this person around for close to a fortnight. It took some work.”

They really did. After joining In-gong’s group, this was the first peaceful day in a fortnight. In fact, it wasn’t just for Amita but In-gong and Felicia as well. The two people had spent several days in turmoil because of the Famine Knight.

“This is armour for the Great Princess.”

Amita said, and Daphne pulled out a box. There was chainmail in the box. Every chain on the armour was so thin that at first glance, it looked like clothes made of cloth.

“Wah, it is amazing!”

Caitlin’s eyes shone as expected when she received the chainmail from Daphne. The chest part was covered with the scales of the black dragon.

Amita's tail waved as they explained,

"There are a few spells which strengthen the body and other support magic. If you activate aura, the chainmail will adjust to fit your body."

Growth adjustment was a very important issue for Caitlin. According to his memory from Knight Saga, Caitlin had been at least one palm taller than she was now.

"It is specialized in defending against ranged attacks, including aura and magic, but don't believe in the armour too much. You might get hurt."

"Thank you. I love it. It is really amazing!"

Caitlin hugged Amita and expressed her gratitude. Amita blinked repeatedly, but they didn't reject Caitlin's violent affection. Amita just stayed within Caitlin's arms.

"Now, this time, it is for you."

Amita glanced at Daphne, who handed a box to In-gong. In-gong opened it to find new greaves made from the scales of the black dragon.

"Greaves?"

In-gong asked reflexively since he was already using the Dragon Scale Greaves.

Amita sneered and said,

"Yes, it is better than what you are using now. Particularly, you can use the sacred flame that the last flame gave you. It will be much more effective. It also fits well with your dragon aura and magic power."

Indeed, it would be nice to have greaves which strengthened his feet techniques. It was just like Amita said. The performance of these new greaves was several times better than the Dragon Scale Greaves.

In-gong gladly put the new Dragon Scale Greaves into his inventory, while Carack asked quietly,

"Raccoon, is mine ready yet?"

“Bah, your armour is unconditionally last. Unconditionally.”

Carack started sulking at Amita’s decisive answer. Amita seemed to feel even better as they looked at In-gong.

“Prince, give Night Watch to me. You won’t be fighting in the Demon King’s Palace, so this is the perfect opportunity.”

“Are you going to improve it?”

“I’m just looking.”

Amita said so, but they were already reaching out for it. Unlike the last time, they were active when it came to work related to the elder dragons. Still, there was no reason to refuse. In-gong handed Night Watch to Amita.

“Then I will head to the workshop.”

Amita held Night Watch in the air with telekinesis and headed toward their workshop. Daphne could be considered Amita’s helper, so she followed along after saying goodbye to In-gong’s party.

After the two of them left, In-gong asked Flora,

“Flora, what is the schedule for the court gathering?”

“Tomorrow morning.”

“It is pretty quick this time as well.”

Carack’s words held true. Every time they returned, it felt like there was a tight schedule for the court gathering.

“Well, it has been a few days since our report. There is no need for time.”

Felicia didn’t seem excessively worried, but she then spoke with a slight frown,

“The problem is the 4th Queen. Did she visit the Demon King’s Palace because of

Gerard?”

“Isn’t it highly likely?”

In-gong agreed. The 4th Queen hardly ever came to the Demon King’s Palace, so it was hard to think of another reason.

Felicia glanced at Caitlin and said carefully,

“That... she isn’t going to be angry right? No matter what happened, Gerard is still the 4th Queen’s...”

Caitlin became depressed at Felicia’s conjecture, but she couldn’t refute it. Both Caitlin and Felicia considered their brothers very precious to them, so they couldn’t deny it. How would they feel if Chris and Silvan had died? Even if the two people did something wrong, they would still feel resentment.

However, In-gong shook his head.

“It isn’t like that.”

This wasn’t the first time In-gong had defeated Gerard. Furthermore, the lycanthropes had judged that Gerard was dead when In-gong first defeated him. At that time, they had expressed their gratitude, so it didn’t make sense to have a grudge now.

“Indeed. That seems to be the case.”

Felicia and Caitlin’s expressions disappeared. Felicia stroked Caitlin’s head a few times and said,

“I’m sorry to leave as soon as I arrived, but Silvan and I will be returning to our mansion. I need to prepare for the court gathering tomorrow. Caitlin, do you want to come with me? Let’s get ready for the court gathering together.

“I understand, Unni.”

This time, Chris wouldn’t be present at the court gathering. So, it was a chance for Caitlyn to try a different style like she had done at Takar’s auction.

“Shutra, I’ll see you tomorrow. Take a rest.”

Felicia, Caitlin and Silvan left the mansion with their aides, and it became silent instantly.

Flora had prepared water for In-gong to wash up and rest after. Then he tried to soothe the sulky Green Wind.

‘Bah. I am not such an easy woman. I won’t fall down due to a few sweet compliments. The soft hands stroking my head are of no use.’

If Green Wind had a tail like Amita, it would be hitting the ground. In-gong listened to Green Wind grumble as he stroked her head, but she didn’t avoid his hands. Rather, her eyes showed that she was enjoying it.

The next morning, the people gathered in a room next to the court gathering and waited for their turn.

Unlike her usual style, Felicia was dressed in a white dress with minimal exposure, and the dress was designed to reveal all her feminine curves.

Caitlin was wearing a pink dress which revealed her shoulders, akin to what she had worn at Takar’s auction. There was also one large ribbon which was quite cute. She was like a well-decorated doll.

Silvan was dressed in a fancy black suit like last time, while In-gong and Carack wore a white suit and black suit, respectively.

Carack spoke while fiddling with his bowtie,

“This is one of the few times I feel really nervous. Is it due to the clothes?”

“That is a pretty good opinion.”

In-gong nodded. Despite living as a prince for half a year already, it still felt strange to get so dressed up. Moreover, this was a court gathering—the demon king was present beyond this wall.

‘Please don’t let anything happen this time.’

There was always a commotion at the court gathering.

As though she read In-gong’s heart, Felicia laughed and told everyone,

“Release your tension. Don’t we already know about the 4th Queen? There should be no surprises.”

“Felicia is right. Nothing will happen.”

Silvan nodded in agreement, but In-gong felt worse after Silvan’s help.

Then at that moment, with perfect timing, the palace servant came and informed them that it was their turn. They glanced at each other before heading into the court gathering. As always, In-gong was the last one to enter the court gathering.

He could sense it the moment the door opened. Something suspicious was flowing in the air. There was clearly something different about this court gathering.

Was it because the 4th Queen was participating in it?

The answer was half correct.

In-gong swallowed his bitter laughter as he saw what was before him. Up on the high dais, there was a person located at each side of the demon king. 4th Queen Elaine Moonlight was on his left, while there was a beautiful woman located on his right side who could be Felicia’s sister.

It was the 3rd Queen, Sylvia Doomblade. Felicia’s mother and queen of the dark elves...

It was her.

“Shutra, be honest. What have you done to my child? These days, she only talks about you when she opens her mouth.”

“Omamama?”(Traditional way for princes and princesses to call their mother, the queen)

“Oh, that sounds like my child.”



# Chapter 146

## Queen #3

The demon king had five queens, but it was rare for him to be accompanied by the queens at official events.

There were many reasons, but in the case of 3rd Queen Sylvia and 4th Queen Elaine, it was because they were queens of their respective species. The queens spent more time in their homes than in the Demon King's Palace. When their children were still young, they had spent half the year at the Demon King's Palace, but that had changed after the children got older.

However, this time, two queens had visited the castle at the same time and were even accompanying the demon king to the court gathering. It wasn't a bad thing, but it definitely wasn't ordinary.

"It truly is 'Disturbance' Shutra."

Silvan muttered, and In-gong didn't bother asking him what he was talking about. Every time In-gong participated in a court gathering, something unusual had happened. So, he was given the nickname 'Disturbance.'

Still, the atmosphere of the court gathering was good. Everyone had been in shock and panic when the sword duke had suddenly taken part in the court gathering, but this time was different. It seemed like they were just slightly surprised.

'Maybe they have adapted.'

This was In-gong's fourth court gathering. Something unusual had happened four times in a row, so it was time to adapt. Felicia had already adapted and didn't bother to gaze at him with stunned eyes. In fact, she seemed relieved that the situation was better than she expected.

'Felicia and Silvan didn't know about it.'

There was no reason for 3rd Queen Sylvia to hide her visit. Since both of them were surprised, it must truly be a sudden visit.

“The 5th Prince, Silvan Doomblade.”

Isabella, the person in charge of the Merits Department, called out Silvan’s name from where she stood at the lowest point of the dais. Although the atmosphere was somewhat different from usual due to the participation of the two queens, there was no reason why the court gathering would be different.

Silvan raised his chin and stepped forward proudly. Felicia and Caitlin’s names were called in turn, then it was In-gong’s name.

It was the start of the court gathering.

“Hah, it ended well.”

As always, Felicia returned to the waiting room after the court gathering was over and sat down on a sofa while sighing.

Like Felicia said, the court gathering had ended well without any commotions. Isabella had read their merits, and the nobles, who had gathered at the court gathering, had praised them. The court gathering had been the same as always, except for the participation of the two queens.

“I’m a little sorry that I didn’t get to hear Abamama’s voice.”

Felicia muttered while closing her eyes. The demon king hadn’t spoken during this court gathering. In fact, normally, the demon king wouldn’t say anything. However, he had always opened his mouth when In-gong was present at the court gathering. So, this was unexpected.

‘There will be all types of speculation.’

It would start with rumours about the 9th Prince losing the demon king’s favour.

‘But I wonder why. Is it because he had no reason to speak?’

In-gong had been anxious every time the demon king opened his mouth, but now, he was curious about why the demon king didn't say anything.

'In the first place, I hadn't received his favour.'

The demon king's gaze toward In-gong was no different from usual. The demon king wasn't particularly disappointed or interested.

'Well, this is normal.'

In Knight Saga, the demon king never spoke much at the court gatherings. So, there was no need to worry too much.

'Death Knight and War Knight... and the report about the Famine Knight. As Felicia said, they weren't mentioned in this court gathering.'

Although during the last court gathering, there had been a bit of political work done in order to determine where the children of the demon king should be dispatched, the court gatherings had originally just been ceremonies to announce the royal children's merits. Even if the Demon King's Palace felt a serious threat from the Knights of the Apocalypse, there was no reason to tell the story at the court gathering.

In-gong looked at Felicia, and they exchanged glances. Felicia had similar thoughts and nodded. Perhaps they could hear more from the Merits Department. There was also a chance that someone from the military would come to them separately.

As In-gong and Felicia were exchanging glances, Silvan laughed and put an arm around Felicia's shoulder.

"Felicia, you can hear my voice on behalf of Abamama."

Then he cleared his voice like he was going to give a loud speech. Felicia, as usual, covered Silvan's mouth with her hand and looked at In-gong and Felicia.

"Anyway, I was surprised. I didn't think that Omamama would come."

In-gong and Caitlin participated in the natural change in topic. Silvan didn't mind and just laughed pleasantly.

Caitlin seemed to recall something and said,

“It is the first time I’ve seen the 3rd Queen in a long time. By the way, she looks exactly the same as Unni. A very strong resemblance.”

Her words were correct. The 3rd Queen Sylvia really resembled Felicia. The difference was that Sylvia was a little bit taller, and the tear point under her left eye made her feel more mature. In fact, they had different eye colours, but the resemblance was really strong. If they stood side by side, anyone would know they were family.

‘She looks like Felicia’s sister, rather than her mother.’

The dark elves were a species with a long lifespan. Despite Sylvia’s actual age, she looked like she was only in her mid-20s, making it seem like she was Felicia’s sister.

Caitlin placed both hands on her cheek as though it was funny, while Felicia laughed and said,

“Caitlin, I was just about to say that.”

The 4th Queen Elaine resembled Caitlin so closely that it was like looking at Caitlin’s future self. However, there was a clear age difference. Caitlin looked like she was in her mid-teens, while Elaine seemed to be in her mid-20s. They looked more like mother and daughter when standing side by side than Sylvia and Felicia did.

However, it was a good story. In-gong loosened his tie to relax and laughed.

“Well, I’m glad it is over. I will go to the Merits Department after returning to my mansion for a bit. I’m going to rest today.”

In order to stay with the ‘Demon King’s Palace Tour’ he had planned the other day, it was necessary to update his merit level at the Merits Department. The higher his merit level, the more places there were which he could explore.

“Very well then.”

Felicia and Silvan nodded in agreement. However, they seemed to be worried about something.

“Felicia unni?”

The moment Caitlin started talking. There was knocking on the door of the waiting room, and a voice was heard. Someone was asking if they could come in.

“Indeed, it came.”

Silvan muttered like he had been anticipating it and gave permission to Sepira. Sepira opened the door to reveal a well dressed male dark elf. He bowed respectfully to In-gong’s group and handed a piece of paper to Carack, Seira, Delia and Sepira before leaving the room.

Once the door of the waiting room was closed, Seira spoke with wide eyes.

“Your Highness, it is an invitation from the 3rd Queen.”

The fancy white piece of paper was an invitation to a tea party.

As always, Carack looked over the invitation meticulously.

“Huh? Isn’t this today’s date? The time is two hours later?”

The invitation to the tea party was sent two hours before it was meant to start. It was different from Baikal’s invitation which had been sent a few days ahead.

“Really? There isn’t a mistake?”

“Really.”

“It is true. It is today’s date.”

Carack and Seira responded to In-gong’s question.

Felicia and Silvan sighed at the same time.

“I thought she would do this. Omamama is always like this.”

Silvan smiled and got up from his seat. Felicia held Silvan’s hand and said to everyone

in the room,

“Let’s go to our mansions together. We still have to change clothes. If we hurry, we’ll be able to make it in time.”

There were only two hours left until the start of the tea party. They had to hurry because they wouldn’t be wearing the court gathering clothes to the tea party.

At Felicia’s urging, In-gong’s group moved quickly. It was a little bit like they were enchanted.

The queen all had their own palaces near the Black Castle which was called the true Demon King’s Palace. After changing clothes at Felicia’s mansion, the group hurried into a carriage pulled by dracos and headed to the 3rd Queen’s Palace.

The 3rd Queen’s palace was like a rugged fortress rather than an actual palace. Once inside, it contained the old-fashioned splendor which was unique to the dark elves. A young dark elf in the butler’s outfit guided the party. They walked deeper into the palace and a great black door appeared.

“Go in.”

A message had been sent in advance, so the servant opened the door instantly. In the well-furnished room, an expected person was sitting down, along with an unexpected person.

‘4th Queen Elaine?’

It wasn’t surprising that 3rd Queen Sylvia was present, since she was the organizer of the tea party, but he hadn’t expected to see Elaine.

In-gong’s head became filled with complicated thoughts. Were the two people close to each other? Or maybe it was because they were now in an alliance? If it was the latter case, this tea party might be more important than he had first thought.

“It isn’t difficult. This is a private place. If you look around, all of us only brought one aide.”

Elaine spoke in a relaxed voice. As she said, there was no visible use for the reception room other than the tea party. The two women were just sitting down, drinking tea and having refreshments.

Apart from the aides, who were like one with their master, it was a private place. The proof was that Elaine spoke without using honorifics with no hesitation. Caitlin, who knew when Elaine used honorifics and when she didn't, relaxed her shoulders.

It was at that moment that Sylvia gazed at Elaine and spoke in a sharp voice,

"Elaine, I am the organizer of the tea party, so shouldn't I be speaking?"

"That's right."

Elaine shrugged casually, and Sylvia frowned. Their attitudes made it obvious that they were familiar with each other, to a certain extent.

'Indeed, it is understandable. Both of them have no interest in their children becoming the demon king.'

It was almost impossible for the 1st and 2nd Queens to be friendly with each other since their children were competing. However, the 3rd and 4th Queens were different from them, since they weren't aiming for the demon king's throne.

Moreover, it wasn't an exaggeration to say that they had both boarded the same boat.

As Elaine laughed, Sylvia turned toward In-gong's party. She had a gentle smile on her beautiful face.

"There is no need to be nervous since this is a private meeting. We are the only ones here, so we don't need to be afraid of rumours."

"Omamama."

Felicia said, while Silvan's eyes narrowed.

"Felicia, shouldn't you say hello?"

It was impossible to refute the words since this was an introduction. Felicia and Silvan led the party in greeting the two queens.

Then Sylvia's aide, a female dark elf with red hair, assigned each party member a seat. Felicia and Silvan were on both sides of Sylvia, while Caitlin was on Elaine's left. In-gong was somewhat distant from all of them, since he was assigned the opposite seat where he had to face the two queens.

Once everyone was seated, Sylvia said elegantly,

"Thank you for accepting my sudden invitation. The reason I prepared this today was because I wanted to talk to you."

Her gaze was directed at In-gong. It was natural. Unlike Elaine who had met him before, today was the first time Sylvia had seen In-gong. Of course, it was possible she had met Shutra a few times before. However, the current In-gong was very different from the past Shutra.

In order for the dark elves to support In-gong fully as a candidate for the demon king, Sylvia needed to meet him at least once. This was a separate matter from trusting Felicia's eyes.

Sylvia smiled happily as In-gong faced her without avoiding her gaze. She was exactly like Felicia yet also different. There was a much more mature atmosphere around her.

Sylvia drank her tea first, then she looked at In-gong.

"I know enough from the court gathering, so let's talk plainly."

In-gong also drank his cup of tea and calmed his breathing. What did Sylvia really want to say?

He had no information about her because he'd had no contact with Sylvia in Knight Saga.

The 3rd Queen, Sylvia Doomblade, stared straight into In-gong's eyes.



# Chapter 147

## Queen #4

“Shutra, be honest. What have you done to my child? These days, she only talks about you when she opens her mouth. It isn’t exactly words but through her letters.”

“Huh?”

In-gong didn’t know what to make of this moment.

He heard two voices speaking at the same time from different places.

“Omamama?!”

“Oh, that sounds like my child.”

The first was Felicia, while the second came from Elaine.

Elaine’s sudden remark caused Caitlin’s eyes to widen.

“Mama? Ah, no. Mother?”

Elaine laughed like the whole situation was amusing. She looked identical to Caitlin, but her personality was completely different. Sylvia didn’t pay attention to Felicia and continued speaking,

“Just two days ago, I got a letter from Felicia. It is one of the reasons why I came here today.”

“Omamama!”

Felicia almost screamed, but Sylvia didn’t listen. She pulled out a letter from a small box she had prepared in advance.

“I have received a few letters, but this one is especially impressive.”

“Oma... hup hup!”

Sylvia was a much more skilled magician than Felicia, and she silenced Felicia’s mouth instantly with a spell. Then she opened the letter.

“Darker than darkness, the deep night was only filled with despair. Silvan seemed like he was going to stop breathing at any moment, and I had fallen to fear. But Omamama, that is when Shutra appeared. It was so cool seeing him appear with a dark blue cloak and a glowing white light. He had led a great army while riding on a white shield and moving faster than the wind, but this time, he was even greater than that. Ah, I can still see it if I close my eyes. I felt relieved just seeing Shutra’s back. It felt like I had found the light in the darkness. Now, I can live, and Silvan can live... Ah, tears came unknowingly to my eyes. I can feel the joy bursting in my heart.”

“Hup hup! Hup!”

Felicia’s face reddened as she struggled to speak.

It seemed like she had truly written the letter a few days ago. The dark elves and lycanthropes were species with queens, so exchanging letters wasn’t difficult since they had transportation formations linked directly to the Demon King’s Palace.

Even Sylvia blushed slightly as she read the letter. Elaine spoke happily as Sylvia folded up the letter,

“Felicia is too adorable. By the way, I also have one to read.”

“Mother?”

Caitlin stood up and shouted. Then Elaine commanded Caitlin with strict eyes,

“Caitlin, sit.”

Caitlin sat down reflexively. She was like a trained puppy. Although Caitlin had a nauseated expression, she didn’t moan or protest. Elaine nodded with a satisfied expression and pulled out a blue stone.

“This is a voice letter Caitlin gave me a while ago.”

Caitlyn had sent it when she left the fourth base to see Felicia off. As Elaine inserted magic power into the stone, Caitlin closed her eyes tightly. Caitlin's excited voice flowed out from the magic stone.

"Amazing! Amazing! Really amazing! He is so great and amazing that he took down the barbarian king! Shutra might even be stronger than Oppa. No, he is going to be stronger. His strength is clear. Isn't it really amazing? Amazing!"

As expected, it was filled with the word 'amazing.' She ran out of breath and the sound of breathing was heard. Then she said in a voice filled with joy, pride and admiration,

"Shutra is amazing."

He could imagine Caitlin's bright and sunny face easily.

'Master, I admit it. The Amazing Princess is really amazing. She seems a little different to me. Well, I don't think we should be the same.'

Green Wind muttered into In-gong's ear, and he stayed silent. It was normal, but he was strangely embarrassed today. Moreover, there was Felicia's letter. Felicia had written the letter after being on the verge of death. Her expression looked like she was going to start crying at any moment. In-gong wasn't much different. His expression didn't change, but his face was red. Apart from the both of them, Caitlin was also embarrassed. She felt a sense of shame after hearing her voice through the magic stone.

Elaine and Sylvia just laughed gracefully. Carack and the other aides also had to put a lot of effort into suppressing their laughter. Delia was pinching her thigh, while Seira and Sepira were biting their lips with their eyes tightly closed.

Silvan was the only one among the children of the demon king who wasn't embarrassed. He smiled while looking at In-gong with envious eyes.

'Huu, hu. Relax.'

In-gong tried to decrease the blood flow in his face as he swallowed his tea. It was slightly helpful in recovering his calm.

Sylvia spoke again,

“It’s a joke. I don’t intend to criticize you, but I want to thank you sincerely.”

Her voice and expression became sombre. She spoke as the mother of two children, not the 3rd Queen.

“Thank you for saving Silvan and Felicia. Shutra, you are the saviour of both me and my family. Thanking you just a few times isn’t enough.”

They weren’t empty words. In-gong could feel Sylvia’s sincerity. It was obvious that she would do anything for In-gong.

In-gong’s lips twitched. He wanted to speak words of humility, but they didn’t emerge.

Sylvia smiled again at In-gong’s appearance.

“Shutra, you really do care about both of them.”

Sylvia could feel it. It wasn’t through any schemes that In-gong had saved Felicia and Silvan. He had done it purely because he cared for both of them.

“It is a relief. I know because I am similar to Felicia... It is easy to see the possible damage. But this time, there is no damage. I’m really glad that she is valued equally.”

Felicia, who had just calmed down, reddened again. In-gong also agreed with Sylvia’s words. It was good that Felicia didn’t suffer any damages, which would have been possible due to her nature.

‘This part is similar.’

They were different from Caitlin and her mother, who resembled each other but had different personalities. Sylvia and Felicia were equally genuine in nature, so In-gong could see Felicia in Sylvia.

“Now, the entertainment is over, so shall we socialize?”

Sylvia lifted the spell on Felicia and raised her teacup. Felicia showed some signs of resentment at the word ‘entertainment’, but it didn’t matter.

Two hours passed by. Sylvia made small talk to promote their friendship. Felicia was the main subject of the chatter, but it was still a fun tea party.

Then In-gong finally understood. There was a big difference in the perceptions of In-gong and the two queens.

For In-gong, he didn't have a lot of time to spare for the fight over the demon king's throne. The Day of Massacre occurred in Year 516 in Knight Sage. This was currently Year 513, so there were only three years left. Moreover, the current Zephyr was much stronger than the Zephyr of Knight Saga. Maybe the incident would occur earlier than anticipated.

However, for the two queens, dozens of years was a short time. The dark elves and lycanthropes were both long-lived species. No, it was like that for all species of the Demon World.

The sura king, Mitra, had risen to the throne of demon king approximately 100 years ago. At the time, he had already been over 60 years old. On the other hand, the eldest of the royal children was only in his 20s. It was obvious there were still decades left to decide the succession.

It was an unbelievable thing for In-gong, but he couldn't mention the Day of Massacre to the two people. Maybe the Day of Massacre might not even happen. The Day of Massacre in Knight Saga happened because all the children of the demon king, except for Zephyr, were greatly damaged during the lycanthrope subjugation.

In-gong planned to block the lycanthrope subjugation and make himself stronger than Zephyr. Then Zephyr wouldn't be able to cause the Day of Massacre.

Sylvia and Elaine were both smart and quick. They were people who could adapt quickly if the situation changed. For the time being, he didn't have to worry too much about the difference in perception.

'Let's talk about the fairy next time. I'll give you some of the things I've prepared to thank you.'

It was the magic message Sylvia had delivered just before he left the tea party. Maybe Elaine's intrusion was unexpected for Sylvia.

‘Well, I don’t think it was a real intrusion.’

Perhaps she had invited Elaine after the court gathering.

In-gong’s party left the palace and boarded the carriage pulled by dracos. Felicia, who had become agitated several times during the tea party, slumped down with a completely worn out expression.

In-gong sat down next to her and suddenly became playful. He pressed his fingers to Felicia’s arms and asked,

“Noona, was I really so cool on that day?”

Rather than answering, Felicia stood up and struck In-gong with her fan. In-gong laughed pleasantly at Felicia’s response.

Carack muttered something strange, causing Delia and Seira to nod with serious expressions. However, In-gong just ignored them.

Time passed once again, and after dropping off Felicia, Silvan and Caitlin, In-gong returned to his mansion with Carack. It had gotten too late, so his visit to the Merits Department had to be postponed until tomorrow.

“It was a fun day.”

“Yes.”

He was completely embarrassed, but there had been many enjoyable parts. In-gong and Carack entered the mansion with smiling faces.

Rather than a pleasant rest, they were met with Flora whose face was strained. A black piece of paper was in her hand.

“It seems like today isn’t over.”

Carack said with narrowed eyes. In-gong agreed and received the black paper from Flora.

There was white lettering on a black background. The contents were pretty similar to Sylvia's invitation.

However, the sender was different. In-gong gave a wry smile as he read the message.

The sender was the sura king, Mitra.

The demon king had sent him an invitation.

# Chapter 148

## Demon King

The contents of the invitation didn't change even though he read it again. The sender was the demon king, and the time was tomorrow morning. The place was the residence of the demon king, called the Black Castle.

Carack received the invitation from In-gong, and his eyes widened with surprise.

"P-prince?"

In-gong had just handed Carack something very serious. This was a natural reaction when it came to anything related to the demon king.

The demon king—the apex of the Demon World, and the strongest person in the Demon World.

He had called out to In-gong. This time, it wouldn't be a public place like the court gathering. According to the invitation, it was an informal meeting. The other person was the demon king, and this fact preceded their relationship of father and son.

'This is the first time.'

An informal meeting with the demon king was something he had never experienced in Knight Saga. In other words, Zephyr was never invited in this way.

In-gong wondered why the demon king had called him. Why had he done such a disruptive thing at each court gathering?

In-gong took a deep breath, and many possibilities passed through his mind. The first thing he thought about was the Four Knights of the Apocalypse.

In-gong had reported that Gerard had been the Famine Knight. The reason In-gong had been able to find out the specific word, 'Famine', was because Gerard had said it himself.



In the cases of Death and War, it was a little more ambiguous.

Gerard had been the Famine Knight and had the power of Famine. There seemed to be a commonality between the power of those with the purple aura and the red power which the barbarian king had used. Additionally, the barbarian king had said the word 'War'.

The keyword 'Death' hadn't been said, but this was enough. If the Demon King's Palace had information on the Four Knights of the Apocalypse, it would be easy for them to make the connection.

Did the demon king want a more specific report? Or had he realized In-gong was the Conquest Knight? Maybe it could be both. There might also be a reason which In-gong couldn't guess. It could truly just be a father and son dialogue.

'That is hard to imagine.'

Anyhow, the invitation had arrived, and there was no such thing as a veto. He could only accept the invitation.

"Brace yourself."

Carack said with a serious expression. In-gong laughed bitterly and asked Flora,

"Flora, who brought the invitation?"

"It was a knight of the royal guards who was wearing a black cloak."

The classification in the Demon King's Palace could be determined based on the colour of their cloaks. Among the knights, only the guards of the demon king could wear black cloaks.

"As expected from the demon king's invitation."

Carack said with admiration. In-gong nodded.

"Yes."

The leader of the guards was Reinhardt, one of the five captains. He was a yaksha and didn't belong to any of the factions.

'The Silent Reinhardt. He is a good escort of the demon king.'

In Knight Saga, he had always been a difficult opponent to face. After thinking about Reinhardt for a bit, In-gong looked at Flora and said,

"Flora, keep this invitation a secret."

"I will do so."

Flora agreed without asking why. It was natural behaviour as a butler.

Carack blinked and asked,

"Prince, are you not going to even tell the princess?"

He was referring to Felicia more than Caitlin. In-gong slightly shrugged and said,

"She will only worry about it."

It would be nice to talk to Felicia who was his political adviser, but she couldn't give any advice regarding the encounter with the demon king. From the outset, he didn't even know why the demon king was calling. It was better to keep it a secret because it would just worry Felicia. Moreover, the meeting with the demon king wasn't in the distant future but tomorrow morning.

In-gong summarized the situation roughly and said to Carack and Flora,

"Let's take a break until tomorrow. And Flora, make dinner a little later than usual. Additionally, Amita, Daphne, Nayatra and Karma will be joining us."

"I will follow your words."

He had been so busy since returning to the Demon King's Palace that he hadn't been able to rest. It was necessary for him to think about some things.

"Carack, I'll be resting in my room until dinner. You don't have to come along since I'll

be hanging out alone.”

“Understood. Then I won’t be in the same room.”

Carack responded with an exhausted face, and In-gong smiled back at him. Carack truly was very helpful.

‘Then I will take a break.’

After the 3rd Queen’s tea ceremony, there were many things for him to think about. So, he would rest and delay his training until after dinner.

However, that plan had to be modified the moment In-gong opened his bedroom door. The long day wasn’t over just yet.

“You came later than I thought.”

The 4th Queen Elaine Moonlight was sitting gracefully on a small sofa in his bedroom. As always, Ludwig was behind her.

As he thought about the current situation, In-gong suppressed the desire to close the door and pretend not to see anything. Why was Elaine here? And why didn’t Flora tell him about Elaine’s visit?

“I came in secret. You should pay more attention to security.”

In-gong smiled and closed his bedroom door.

“It is nice to see you again.”

“This is an informal place, like the tea party, so there is no need to talk like that.”

Elaine was the one to relax the formalities. She invited In-gong to sit in the opposite chair, and he didn’t refuse. He pushed back his fatigue as he faced Elaine.

“Did something happen?”

He suppressed it as much as possible but a little bit of displeasure showed. Elaine seemed to catch a glimpse of it and made an apologetic expression.

"I couldn't talk to you properly at Sylvia's tea party. Shutra, you know why I came to the Demon King's Palace, right?"

It was just like how Sylvia couldn't talk about the fairy.

In-gong nodded instead of answering, and Elaine let out a long breath.

"Gerard Moonlight. My dear brother, whom the lycanthropes were so proud of."

In-gong was a little bit disconcerted by the affection which dripped from her voice. Did she have a grudge against In-gong like Felicia was worried about?

However, fortunately, it was groundless. Elaine waved her hands and said,

"There is no need to stress. I want to thank you. It is a really funny story, but... I'm glad. Once again, I don't have to risk my life fighting against Gerard."

Her brother had gone crazy. She had known there was no way other to stop him, other than to kill him. However, even so, he was her brother, and even now, pleasant memories rose when she closed her eyes.

Elaine was good at hiding her feelings, but not this time. She gave a low sigh as her eyes became damp.

In-gong didn't dare say anything and just waited. Elaine hid all her emotions with a smile, and In-gong felt in awe as he looked at her.

"You are becoming stronger really quickly. Like Caitlin said, you are completely amazing."

At the end, Elaine smiled brightly in a way which was different than normal. However, it really suited her. She looked just like Caitlin, so In-gong flinched involuntarily as she spoke in a manner similar to Caitlin.

'Master, do you like the word 'amazing' that much?'

Green Wind whispered into his ears. As a result, In-gong regained his spirit and fixed his expression quickly.

Elaine just laughed. She let out a long breath once again and stared straight at In-gong.

“I just wanted to thank you, Shutra. Thank you very much.”

It was just like Sylvia at the tea party. Elaine had an innocent, pure heart.

However, that didn't last long. Elaine restored her confident expression and leaned back against her chair.

“This isn't enough. You have helped resolve a longstanding problem of the lycanthropes. If you have something you want, tell me. If I can do it, I will try hard to give you the appropriate compensation.”

It was a very pleasant speech but confusing as well. In-gong faced Elaine as he started thinking, and the first thing that came to mind was being hit by Divine Beast Authority.

‘Be reasonable, reasonable.’

It was a very attractive reward, but there was no way to convince Elaine. Being hit as a reward... nobody would be crazy enough to make the suggestion.

It was at that moment—

“Do you want to be hit with aura?”

Elaine asked playfully, and In-gong flinched reflexively. Then Elaine's expression became one of embarrassment.

“Uh, did you really think of that?”

In-gong was equally embarrassed and couldn't answer right away. Elaine became more embarrassed as he stayed silent.

“Uh, um. Yes. I respect your taste... Yes, I respect you.”

“Ah, no! That's not it!”

In-gong stood up and waved his hands.

"I would like to learn Divine Beast Authority a little deeper. I would like a spar with Queen Elaine and the leader of your guard. I was thinking about the spar and became surprised when I heard you mention aura."

Ludwig narrowed his eyes at In-gong's clarification, and Elaine laughed. As In-gong sat down again, she said,

"Hmm, it isn't hard, but it isn't really a reward. You will learn it anyway. A spar with Ludwig is too heavy as a reward."

Elaine was troubled for a moment, then finally, she sighed.

"It can't be helped. I will think about a separate compensation. I thought it would be easy, but it has become more difficult than I thought."

However, there was a subtle pleasure on her face. It seemed like the process of thinking about a present was fun for her.

As the story about the reward came to a close, Elaine pulled out a new topic.

"Shutra, I saw your report to the Demon King's Palace. Gerard was the Famine Knight?"

"Yes, he said so."

In-gong studied Elaine's response. Based on her frown, she didn't know anything about the Famine Knight.

"I am currently collecting information. Gerard was able to escape from the Grey Tower because he had become the Famine Knight. If I find anything, I will let you know."

It wasn't just information sharing. In-gong realized that this was the support he hadn't received in the past. Maybe the dark elves also had some information to tell In-gong.

"I think it is time to go back. Sorry for breaking into your bedroom."

"It is okay. Just don't do it often."

Elaine laughed at In-gong's careful answer.

“I really can’t say anything.”

As though it was punishment for the joke, Elaine kissed him lightly on the forehead like he was her own child.

“Oh, and Shutra, can I ask one more question?”

“Tell me.”

In-gong looked up at Elaine. Elaine came closer with a wicked expression and asked In-gong,

“Between Caitlin and Felicia, who do you think is cuter? Well, it makes no difference if they are cute or pretty.”

“Huh?”

Who was prettier? What type of question was this?

However, Elaine was quite serious.

“It isn’t a joke. I’m serious.”

“Uh...”

In-gong was unable to answer. Then Elaine clicked her tongue and increased the distance.

“I am satisfied with just that answer. It is obvious, but I am looking forward to getting to know you better. Then I’ll see you next time.”

Elaine knocked on In-gong’s shoulder and walked out of the bedroom. It seemed like she was going out the front door, unlike when she came in.

Flora was shocked to see her, but saw her off. In-gong apologized to Flora briefly before lying down on his bed.

The long day was over, and a new morning shone.

In-gong had gone to bed early and started the day with his usual routine. An informal meeting with the demon king was an extraordinary event, but it was important to maintain his composure.

In-gong postponed meeting Felicia and Caitlin at the Merits Department to the afternoon and left his house with a calm mind. He travelled to the Black Castle, the demon king's residence, in a carriage.

"I'm nervous."

Carack said what In-gong was thinking. He had visited the Black Castle every time for the court gathering, but it felt different today. The invitation had only stated that the location was the Black Castle, so In-gong thought someone would come out.

As expected, there was someone waiting for In-gong.

"It has been a while. In the meantime, you've become stronger."

"Sword Duke!"

In-gong had thought a guard would be waiting for him, so he was full of pleasure at the surprise. The sword duke sent him a relaxed smile.

"I heard about your activities. Everyone at the court gathering was astonished."

The sword duke was suddenly standing right in front of In-gong. In-gong couldn't grasp the movement and stared with admiration. He still had a long way to go before he would reach the sword duke's level.

"It is just a little trick, so don't be surprised. Frankly, Prince is more amazing from my perspective."

The sword duke had grasped it almost immediately. In-gong's current strength was no comparison to when he had been at Thunderdoom Fortress.

"I'd like to talk to Prince more, but unfortunately, I have to give priority to my mission."



From now on, stay focused as I guide you.”

The sword duke then spoke to Carack,

“Please stay here. You won’t be able to follow any further.”

Carack looked at In-gong instead of replying to the sword duke. In-gong nodded once.

“Understood. I’ll wait here.”

Carack replied to In-gong with a determined expression, but he couldn’t hide his worried gaze.

“I thought it before, but Prince really has a good aide.”

The sword duke laughed before stepping forward. The surrounding landscape changed instantly.

In-gong focused his mind like the sword duke had said to do. In-gong was sensitive to magic and could feel the strong torrents of magic power rushing around like a storm. If he was just a little bit distracted, he would get lost in the torrent of magic power.

The sword duke continued walking, while In-gong triggered his quad-core. This process of moving along with the sword duke seemed like a test to see if he had the minimum qualifications.

Some time passed by.

The surrounding landscape then became fixed.

There was a white building, reminiscent of a temple under a dark blue sky. Other than that, the darkness was so thick that In-gong couldn’t see anything other than the building. In-gong and the sword duke were standing on the stone stairs leading to the building.

“I can only go with you up to here. The demon king is there.”

The sword duke pointed to the white building.

Taking a deep breath, In-gong took a step forward.

Then finally, beyond the staircase, the demon king was there, standing in the middle of the building.

# Chapter 149

## Demon King #2

White floors, pillars and ceilings—other than that, it was just a lot of space, and the demon king stood out from where he was standing in the center.

He didn't look back. His black hair was longer than In-gong had thought it would be as it reached his waist. The dark blue cloak made the presence of the demon king even clearer. In-gong had always been looking at his seated form in the court gatherings from a distance, but he now approached the back of the demon king.

In-gong swallowed his saliva. His mouth was dry. Just approaching the demon king made his breathing rough. Was it due to the huge pressure? The demon king wasn't emitting power. He kept silent just like he did in the court gathering.

However, as he narrowed the distance, the demon king simply maintained his position. In-gong understood the presence this man had and the reason why he had the position of the demon king.

The demon king turned around, and In-gong stopped walking reflexively. The distance between them was about five meters, so there wouldn't be any difficulty in communicating.

In-gong looked up at the demon king. It was the first time In-gong had been so close to him.

The demon king's eyes were red, and In-gong was reminded of Felicia. Felicia's and Silvan's red eyes resembled the demon king. However, the demon king's eyes were quite different from the two of them. His red eyes were more similar to that of the sword duke. The sword duke's eyes seemed to be able to see through anything. What did the demon king see? How far did he see into In-gong?

"9th Prince Shutra, I greet the demon king."

Tension filled In-gong as he opened his mouth. He had practiced this many times in

advance, so he didn't go too fast or stutter. Instead, he spoke in a calm voice.

In-gong was facing the demon king, someone who had so little contact with his children that just simply talking at the court gathering was a shock. Why had the demon king demanded a clandestine meeting?

The demon king opened his mouth to reply. His voice sounded slightly more emotional than it had been at the court gathering, but it was still dry.

"You have come, Semita's child."

Semita Ignus, the 5th Queen who had now left the world—she was the daughter of the gandharva king, Karuta, and Shutra's mother.

It was an unexpected title. Did the 5th Queen have a larger presence on the demon king than In-gong thought? Or was it a title that indicated some distance?

In-gong was reminded of the tea party he had with 3rd Queen Sylvia. Sylvia truly loved the demon king. There was a slight change in her eyes and voice every time she mentioned him. 4th Queen Elaine was different. For her, the demon king was a business partner who couldn't be avoided. She didn't hate the demon king, but she didn't love him.

What was the relationship between the demon king and the 5th Queen? Was it due to his memories of the 5th Queen that In-gong was called here today?

It couldn't be. It wasn't possible.

In-gong simplified the complex thoughts in his head. Rather than avoiding the demon king's gaze, In-gong faced him like it was the court gathering.

The demon king smiled. It was a small smile, but he definitely did it.

In-gong was able to understand the minds of those who attended the court gathering. He hadn't understood why they were amazed every time the demon king spoke, but In-gong understood now. He felt his head go blank just because the demon king smiled.

The demon king gazed at In-gong calmly and said,

“Semita’s child was born into this world without a soul. Poor Semita thought it was a heavenly punishment for the sin of the gandharva.”

In-gong took a deep breath. The words contained a story which couldn’t be overlooked. A child born without a soul... The gandharvas’ sin...

He couldn’t understand the ‘no soul’ part easily. What did it mean? Had Shutra been incompetent because he had no soul?

The sins of the gandharva were easily linked in his head. Currently, the gandharva as a whole species were confined, and the reason for such a punishment was due to the ‘sin of the gandharva’. If so, what did they do wrong? When thinking about the cause-and-effect, it was a crime committed before Shutra’s birth.

There were many things In-gong wanted to ask, but he was patient. The demon king hadn’t finished speaking yet. He was still looking at In-gong.

“But now a strong soul is present. If Semita saw you now, she would have liked it very much.”

Shutra had become In-gong. The empty vessel was filled with In-gong’s essence.

How much did the demon king know? Had he noticed that In-gong was a separate person from Shutra? Or did he think it was just Shutra’s transformation? The latter possibility was slightly higher. There was no reason to add that 5th Queen Semita would be delighted with this.

‘No, this is meaningless.’

In-gong had become Shutra; they had already become one. Standing here were both Shutra and In-gong.

The demon king’s gaze moved away. It was a gaze which was looking at both In-gong and the surroundings. In-gong understood instinctively that the demon king was different from the sword duke. It was clear the demon king was looking at something the sword duke couldn’t see.

The demon king’s gaze turned back to In-gong again. His voice was low and heavy, but

it wasn't cold.

"Shutra, Semita's child, you have become strong very quickly. I look forward to you becoming stronger in the future. The torrent of destiny is swirling around you."

The modification of fate—

The demon king felt it. It had been there since he first encountered In-gong at the court gathering, and it was the same with every meeting after that.

Thus, the demon king made his decision.

"I called you today to see if the sword duke's words were true and to make a judgment."

Those with purple energy and red energy were attacking various places in the Demon World... And someone who claimed to be the Famine Knight had appeared in this world. In-gong had encountered all of them. The torrent of destiny was swirling around them.

"The strongest person must rise to the demon king's throne. This is because the demon king isn't the one who rules the Demon World, but the one who protects it."

In-gong was reminded of the destroyed indigenous species. How much did the demon king know? How much did he know about the Four Knights of the Apocalypse? Or did he consider the Four Knights of the Apocalypse a challenge, just like the sword duke?

In-gong realized it was useless to think about this as it was all the same to him. The demon king was the one who protected the Demon World, so all threats were the same to him. Just like the sword duke said, he had to become strong enough to defeat them.

The demon king raised his right hand slowly.

"The accomplishments I've achieved —the sword duke called them extreme nothingness. I don't like putting down a name for it, but Shutra, you should know. It isn't easy to defeat his stubbornness."

The demon king gave a small laugh. It was hard to imagine since the demon king had only been seen at the court gathering, but this could be called the true image of the demon king.

“I will leave something to you. It is the Seed of Extreme Nothingness. I hope you will be able to germinate it someday. I hope to see you reach beyond the limits of what I have achieved.”

It was one of the reasons for calling In-gong here. The demon king was suffering from a deep illness and wanted to place a bet on the future that the sword duke saw.

The demon king stretched out his hand. The distance between In-gong and the demon king narrowed, and the demon king laid a big hand on In-gong’s head.

“The only ones who have received this are Zephyr and you. Even if the sword duke guided you here, you made it this location with your own strength, unlike Baikal and Anastasia.”

The demon king didn’t speak anymore.

In-gong closed his eyes naturally. It was the same as when the sword duke gave him the Sura Heart Law. The demon king’s blue aura enveloped In-gong’s body.

It was like a lightning bolt, and In-gong shrieked silently in pain.

At that moment, the white woman’s desperate voice was heard from far away. It was similar to Green Wind’s howling.

‘Conquer. Obedience and rule.’

Divine Sura Authority responded. In-gong opened all his powers, including the dragon heart and Moonlight Core. He needed to accept something he couldn’t bear.

It was only for a moment, but it also seemed to last for eternity. It was engraved deep into In-gong’s soul. Then a woman’s voice rang in his ears,

[Extreme Nothingness Lv 0 has been learnt.]

It was like when he first encountered Conquest’s power. This was a power which wasn’t available to him yet, but it was obvious to In-gong that it was inherently strong.

Extreme nothingness—this was the demon king's greatest treasure even when he was dying of illness. It was natural that the power of Conquest couldn't dominate it.

However, that didn't mean it wasn't successful. In-gong felt a change to his body—the balance within had been shaken due to the addition of the dragon heart. That balance was completely broken and aligned into a new balance. It was the effect of Extreme Nothingness which In-gong hadn't even opened yet.

The demon king saw such a change in In-gong. Even Zephyr had found the Seed of Extreme Nothingness hard to accept in its sealed state, so the demon king couldn't help admiring In-gong.

"I'm amazed, but don't be unreasonable. There is no need to be too hasty."

However, the demon king's voice didn't reach In-gong. In-gong had already lost consciousness as a white light shone from his body. It was in order to endure the physical changes more efficiently.

The demon king looked at In-gong and cast a magic spell in the air. The sword duke came like the wind and grabbed In-gong. He observed the changes taking place in In-gong's body and laughed.

"Once again, he really is amazing."

Instead of replying, the demon king smiled. However, that didn't last long. He staggered like he had felt a sudden dizziness and cast magic. A chair sprouted from the ground to support his body.

"Are you okay?"

The sword duke asked with a frown. His worried eyes and voice showed the warmth of a teacher toward his disciple. Rather than immediately replying to the sword duke's question, the demon king sat down. He didn't miss the other meaning in the sword duke's question.

Was it okay to pass the Seed of Extreme Nothingness to the 9th Prince like he had also shared it with 2nd Prince Zephyr?

It was a question which didn't even need to be discussed. The demon king closed his



eyes and rasped,

“Sword Duke, you should know. It is enough for the strongest person to rise to the seat of the demon king. Whether they are blood related or not, it doesn’t matter.”

It was the law that only the demon king’s children could become the next demon king. Although every child of the demon king followed this law, it was meaningless to the demon king.

The sword duke nodded silently. He agreed with the demon king’s idea that the strongest person should become the demon king. Furthermore, the sword duke knew about the secret of the 9th Prince’s birth. He knew how much 5th Queen Semita had loved the demon king.

The fact that the demon king’s blood didn’t flow in the 9th Prince wasn’t important to the sword duke, since the 9th Prince had already been acknowledged.

“I will return to the Holy Land after bringing 9th Prince back. Stay healthy until we meet again.”

“You too.”

The sword duke disappeared like the wind after the short exchange of farewells. Once alone, the demon king looked up at the dark sky slowly.

The demon king read the fate of the Demon World...

And he felt the strong torrents of destiny around both Zephyr and In-gong.

The demon king’s illness was progressing faster than expected. The demon king closed his eyes, and he fell into a deep sleep for a while.

Guardian Queian raised his head.

In the south, he looked toward the north and knew he could no longer delay.

Of the six elder dragons who guarded and maintained this world, there were only

three remaining. Watcher Ainkel and Violet Kaltein were no longer present. Recorder Torres had fallen into a deep sleep he couldn't wake up from.

The only ones left, aside from Queian, were the Great Enkidu and Cruel Talia.

Soon, there would be a great fight, and the fight had to end the burning of the Demon World. It absolutely couldn't reach the Human World.

“Go, my child. Become the sword and shield to protect the Human World.”

His voice was filled with magic. The words of blessings went far away from Queian's lair.

From south to north...

The child of Guardian Queian, the warrior Locke moved with his colleagues.

They headed toward the Demon World.



PDF by: traitorAIZEN